





BANCROFT LIBRARY









The  
History of Trauayle  
in the  
West and East Indies, and other  
countreys lying eyther way,  
towardses the fruitfull and ryche  
Moluccaes.

Gathered in parte, and done into Englÿshe by  
Richarde Eden.

Imprinted at London  
by Richarde Iugge.  
1577

Part III

E 141

.E23

1940

PT.3

The  
History of the  
in the  
that the first and other  
the first and other  
the first and other  
the first and other

Selected in 1940, and has been  
revised.

Published at London  
by George Allen &  
Unwin

1940



Bancroft Libr

mynes, there is also from day to day found, or otherwyle gotten, great treasure of such wrought gold as hath ben in þe custodie of the subdued Indians & theyr kynges, aswel of such as they haue geuen for theyr tyme and raunsome, or otherwyle, as frendes to the Christians, besyde that whiche hath ben violently taken from the rebelles: but the greatestt parte of the wrought golde whiche the Indians haue, is base, and holdeth somewhat of copper, of this they make bualletes and chaynes, and in the same they close theyr iewels whiche theyr women are accustomed to weare, & esteemed moze then al the richesse of the worlde. The maner howe golde is geathered, is this, eyther of suche as is founde in *Zauana*, that is to saye in the playnes and ryuers of the champion countrey beyng without trees, whether the earth be with grasse or without, or of suche as is sometymes founde on the land without the ryuers in places where trees growe, so that to come by the same, it shalbe requisite to cut downe many and great trees. But after which so euer of these two maners it be founde, eyther in the ryuers or breaches of waters, or els in the earth, I wyl shewe howe it is founde in both these places, and howe it is separate and poured. Therefore when the myne or byrne is discovered, this chaunceth by searchyng and pryuyng in such places as by certaine signes and tokens do appere to skylful men apte for the generation of golde, and to holde golde: and when they haue found it, they folowe the myne, and labour it, whether it be in the ryuer, or in the playne, as I haue sayde. And if it be founde on the playne, fyrr they make the place very cleane where they entende to dygge, then they dygge epght or tenne foote in length, and as muche in breadth: but they goe no deeper then a spanne or two, or moze, as shal seeme best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally, then they washe all the earth whiche they haue taken out of the sayde space, and if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it, and if not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they dyd before: and if then also they fynde nothyng, they continue in diggyng and washyng þe earth as before, untyl they come to the harde rocke or stone: and if in fine they fynde no golde there, they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but goe to an other part. And it is to be understood, that when they haue founde

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

377



founde the myne, they solowe it in dyggynge, in the same mea-  
 sure in leuell and deapth, vntyll they haue made an ende of all  
 the myne whiche that place conteyneth, if it appeare to be riche.  
 This myne ought to consist of certayne feete or pales in length  
 or breadth, accordyng to certayne orders determined, and with-  
 in that compasse of earth, it is not lawefull for any other to digge  
 for golde: And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrste  
 founde the golde, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that  
 wyl, with a staffe to assigne hym selfe a place by the syde of the  
 same, inclosing it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mines  
 of *Zauana* (that is, such as are found in the plaines) ought euer to  
 be sought neare to some ryuer or brooke, or spring of water, or  
 dyke, or standyng poole, to thende that the golde may be washed,  
 for the which purpose they vse the labour of certayne Indians,  
 as they do other in dyggynge of the myne. And when they haue  
 dygged out the myne, they fyll certayne trayes with that earth,  
 whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receyue  
 at theyr handes, and to cary those trayes of earth to the water,  
 where it may bee washed: Yet do not they that byng it,  
 washe it, but deliuer it to other, puttyng it out of theyr owne  
 trayes into theys, whiche they haue redy in theyr handes to re-  
 ceyue it. These washers for the most part are the Indian wo-  
 men, because this woork is of lesse paine and traueyle then any  
 other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to lye  
 by the water syde, with theyr legges in the water euen by to the  
 knees, or lesse, as the place serueth theyr purpose: and thus hold-  
 yng the trayes with earth in theyr handes by þ handles thereof,  
 and puttyng the same into the water, they moue them rounde  
 about, after the maner of spyrng, with a certayne aptnesse,  
 in suche sorte that there entereth no moze water into the trays  
 then serueth theyr turne, and with the selfe same apte mouyng  
 of theyr trays in the water, they euer auoyde the foule water  
 with the earth out of the one syde of the vessel, and receyue  
 in cleane water on the other syde thereof, so that by this meanes  
 by litle and litle, the water washeth the earth as the lyghter  
 substauce of the trays, and the golde as the heauyer mat-  
 ter resteth in the bottome of the same, beyng rounde and  
 holowe in the myddest lyke unto a barbars baten: And when  
 all



all the earth is atoyded, and the gold geathered together in the bottome of the tray, they put it a part, and returne to take more earth, whiche they walhe contynually as befoze. And thus they that labour in this woozke, do geather daply suche portion of golde as shall please God to graunt to the Patrones of these Indians, and suche other as trauayle in the same. Furthermore it is to be noted, that for euery two Indians that walhe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bypng earth from the myne, and other two to bzeake the same small, and syl they? trayes therwith. Also beyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there be other people in the place where they woozke & rest in the night: these are suche as make they? bread, and prouide for victuals, and other necessaries. So that to conclude, there are in al, syue persons ordinarilie assigned to euery tray of washers. There is an other manner of wozyng the mynes, in ryuers or brookes of runnyng waters: and this is, that in auoydpyng the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are dyye and vterly emptied, they synde golde among the bzeaches, chytes, and ryctes of stones, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the ryuer runneth of greatest force: So that it chaunceth sometyne, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they synde in it great quantitie of gold. And therfoze your Maestie ought to vnderstand for a general rule, as it appeareth in fact, that all golde is engendred in the toppes and hyghest places of the mountaynes, and in continuance of tyme is by litle and litle brought downe to the vales and playnes by thewyces of rayne, and the falles of spynges, ryuers, and brookes, haupng they? originall in the mountaynes, and discending from the same, notwithstanding it is ostentymes founde in the playnes farre from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the most part among the mountaynes, and in the ryuers, or they? bzaunches, moze then in any other part of the playne: and in these two maners it is commonly founde most abundantly. And for the better prooze that golde is engendred on hygh, and is brought dotone into the lowe places, I haue one great token therof, whiche causeth me to belceue it for certayne: and this is, to consyder that coles neuer putrifie nor

corrupt



corrupt vnder the grounde, if they be made of strong woodde. Wherby it chaunceth, that dygging the earth by the foundes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, & breaking a myne in the earth where it had been broken before, and having nowe dygged one or two or thye Poles in measure, the myners founde certayne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they founde golde, and this I say in the earth whiche was taken for a Virgin, that is to saye, such as had not before been opened for any myne: the whiche coles coulde not naturally be engendred there, or enter in by any meanes, but when the superficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is like that the coles were left there by some occasion of tyme, and that they fastened there in tyme, and that afterwarde in long continuance of tyme, they were by litle and litle couered with the earth, whiche the often thewyces of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeres the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the sayd leuel & measure, which had before tyme been the superficial part of the earth, where the coles and golde were found together: wherby it may appeare that the golde was no more engendred there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the falles of waters as we haue sayd, forasmuch as the mountaynes are the Partices and bowels of all tye metals. Further and besyde this, I say that in howe muche more the golde is gone farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde; it is so much the more purified and fined, and of a better caract, and the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or beyne where it is engendred, it is so much the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and caract, and doth wast so muche the more in meltynge, and remaineth more byckle. Sometymes there are founde graines of golde of great quantitie, and of great weyght about the earth, and sometymes also vnder the earth: And the greatest of all other that was founde to this day in the Indies, was that whiche was lost in the sea about the *Islande Beata*, whiche weyghed thye thousande and two hundred Castellans of gold, which are in value foure thousand a hundred thyrtye and eyght ducades of golde, whiche weigh one *Arroas* and seuen pounce, or thyrtye and two pounce, after twelue ounce





ces to the pounce, whiche make threescore and foure markes of golde. And I sawe in the yeere .1515. in the handes of *Mychel Passamonte* treasurer to your maiestie, two graines, of the whiche one wayed seuen poundes, which are .xliii. markes, and are in value about threescore and fyue ducades of golde every marke: the other was of .x. markes, whiche are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of .xxii. caractes, and better: There are also founde many other great graynes, although not equall vnto these in bygnesse. And forasmuch as I haue spoken of gold, I haue thought good to declare somewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gylte suche vessels of copper and base golde as they make: for they can geue them so fayre and flozzyng a coloure, that al the masse which they gylt, appeareth as though it were golde of .xxii. caracies, and better. This colour they geue with a certayne hearbe, as though it were wrought by y<sup>e</sup> art of any goldsmith of Spayne or Italie, and woulde of them bee esteemed as a thyng of great ryches, and a secrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue spoken sufficiently of the mynes of golde, I wyl nowe speake somewhat of copper, because I haue made mention thereof. This metal is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies, and also in the firme lande, and is founde dayly in great quantitie, holdyng somewhat of golde. But for the desyre that our men haue to golde, they nothyng esteeme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profyt be had thereby, and also by other metals, whiche they nothyng regarde, except syluer, which is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande whiche is called newe Spaine. But of this it shal suffice to haue saide thus muche, because I haue moze particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystory of India.

A marke, is a pounce of viii. ounces summa .xvi. li. weyght. viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the. li.

## Of the maner of fyshyng for pearles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshyng for the most part in y<sup>e</sup> coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*, and many of them which dwell in the houses of certayne particular lords in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iobannis*, resort to the Ilande of *Cubagua*.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



*Cubagua*, for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, syxe, or seuen, or moze in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes, earely in the mornyng to some place in the sea thereabout, where it appeareth vnto them that there should be great plentie of those shell fyshes (which some call *Piscles*, and some *Dysters*) wherein pearles are engendred, & there they plunge them selues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, sayng one that remaineth in the *Canoa* or boate, which he keepeth still in one place as neare as he can, lookyng for theyr returne out of the water: And when one of them hath ben a good whyle vnder the water, he ryseth vp, and commeth swimmyng to the boate, entryng into the same, and leapyng there al the *Dysters* which he hath taken and broughe with hym (for in these are the pearles found) and when he hath there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten part of the *Dysters*, he returneth agayne to the water, where he remaineth as long as he can endure, and then ryseth agayne, and swimmeth to the boate with his pray, where he resteth hym as befoze, and thus continueth course by course, as do all the other in lyke maner, be- yng al most expert swimmers and dyuers: and when the night draweth neare, they returne to the *Ilande* to theyr houses, and present all the *Dysters* to the maister or steward of the house of theyr lord, who hath the charge of the sayde *Indians*, and when he hath geuen them somewhat to eate, he layeth vp the *Dysters* in safe custodie, vntyll he haue a great quantitie therof, then he causeth the same fysher men to open them, and they fynd in euery of them pearles, other great or small, two, or thye, or foure, and sometymes fyue or syxe, and many small graines, ac- cordyng to the liberaltie of nature. They saue the pearles both smal and great whiche they haue founde, and eyther eate the *Dysters* if they wyl, or cast them away, hauyng so great quan- titie thereof, that they in maner abhoze them. These *Dysters* are of harde fleshe, and not so pleasaunt in eatyng as are ours of *Spayne*. This *Iland* of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyshing is exercised, is in the North coaste, and is no bygger then the *Ilande* of *Zeland*. Oftentymes the sea increaseth greatly, and much moze then h fishers for pearles would, because where as the place is very deepe, a man can not naturally rest at the bottome, by



by reason of the abundaunce of ayyr substance whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentimes pꝛoued . For although he may by violence and force discende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted by agayne, so that he can contynue no tyme there : and therefore where the sea is very deepe, these Indian fyshers vse to tye two great stones about them with a cord, on euery syde one, by the weyght whereof they discende to the bottome, and remayne there vntyll them lyfteth to ryse agayne, at whiche tyme they vlose the stones, and ryse by at theyꝝ pleasure. But this theyꝝ aptnesse and agilitie in swymmyng, is not the thyng that causeth men most to marueyle : but rather to consyder howe many of them can stande in the botonie of the water for the space of one whole houre, and some moꝛe or lesse, accoꝛdyng as one is moꝛe apt hecreunto then an other . An other thyng there is whiche seemeth to me very straunge : and this is, that where as I haue oftentimes demaunded of some of these Lordes of the Indians, of the place where they are accustomed to fysh for pearles, beyng but litle and narrowe, wyl not in short tyme be utterly without Oysters, of they consume them so fast. They all answered me, that although they be consumed in one part, yet if they goe a fyshyng in an other part, or an other coaste of the Islande, or at an other contrary wynde, and contynue fyshyng there also vntyll the Oysters be lykwys consumed, and then returne agayne to the first place, or any other place where they fished before, and emptied the same in lyke maner, they fynde them agayne as full of Oysters as though they had neuer been fyshed. Wherby we may iudge, that these Oysters eyther remoue from one place to an other, as do other fishes, or els that they are engendꝛed and encrease in certayne ordinarie places. This Island of *Cumana* & *Cubagua*, where they fysh for these pearles, is in the twelue degree of the part of the said coast which inclineth toward the North. Likewise pearles are founde and geathered in the South sea, called *Mare del Sur*, & the pearles of this sea are very big, yet not so big as they of the Island of pearles, called *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, which the Indians cal *Terarequi*, lying in the gulfe of *Sainct Michael*, where greater pearles are founde, and of greater pryce, then in any other coast of the North sea.

Of this reade  
more largely in  
the decades.

in

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



By the computation of Venice, foure granes make a Caratt.

In *Cumana*, or any other part. I speake this as a true testimonie of syght, hauing been long in that South sea, and making curious inquisition to be certaynely enscourmed of al that parteyneth to the fshyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Terarequi*, there was brought a pearle of the fashyon of a *Deare*, weighing thyrtye and one Caractes, which *Petrus Arias* had among a thousand and so many poundes weyght of other pearles, whiche he had when captayne *Gaspar Morales* (befoze *Petrus Arias*) passed to the sayde Ilande in the yeece . 1515. whiche pearle was of great pryce. From the sayde Ilande also, came a great and very rounde pearle, which I brought out of the sea, this was as bygge as a smal pellet of a Stonebowe, and of the weyght of twentie and syx Caractes: I bought it in the citie of *Panama*, in the sea of *Sur*, and payde for it syx hundred and fytie tymes the weyght therof of good golde, and had it thre yeres in my custodie, and after my returne into Spayne, sold it to the Earle of *Nansao Marquesse* of *Zenete*, great Chamberlayne to your Maiestie, who gaue it to the Marquesse his wyfe, the Lady *Mentia* of *Mendoza*. I thynke verily that this pearle was the greatest, fayrest, and roundest that hath been seene in those partes. For your maiestie ought to vnderstand, that in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundred great pearles rounde after the fashyon of a *Deare*, to one that is perfectly rounde and great. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Christians call the Ilande of pearles, and other call it the Ilande of *Floures*, is founde in the eight degree on the South syde of the fyne land, in the prouince of golden Castyle, or *Beragus*, and these are the coastes of the fyne lande, where pearles are founde euen vnto this day: I vnderstande also that there are pearles founde in the prouince and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And since your maiestie appoynted me a gouernour and captayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertysed that pearles are founde in diuers other places, as about the Ilande of *Codego*, whiche lyeth agaynst the mouth of that port of the Ilande of *Cartagenia*, which the Indians call *Coro*, the which Ilande and port are on the North syde, in the tenth degree of the coastes of the fyne lande.





Of the familiaritie which certayne of the Indians  
haue with the deuyll, and howe they receyue  
answere of him of thinges to come.



When the Indians begyn theyr battayle, or  
goe to any combat, or attempt any other  
great matter, they haue certayne elect men,  
whem they reuerendly esteeme, & call them  
*Tequinas*, which in theyr tounge is as much  
to say as maisters: notwithstanding that  
they call euery man, that is cunning in any  
science, by the same name, as fyshers, fowlers, hunters, or ma-  
kers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they call the maisters  
of theyr answers, because they speake with *Tuyra*, that is, the  
deuyll, and byng them answerers what he sayeth, epyther as tou-  
chyng such thinges as they haue to doe, or shall chaunce to them  
the day folowng, or many dayes to come. For the deuyll, beynge  
so auncient an *Astronomer*, knoweth the tymes of thinges, and  
seeth howe they are naturally directed and inclyned, and ma-  
keth them beleue that they come so to passe by his ordinaunce,  
as though he were the Lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe,  
and that hee gyueth the day lycht, and rayne, causeth tempest,  
and ruleth the stations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe, or takyng away  
lyfe, at his pleasure: By reason whereof, the Indians be-  
yng deceived of hym, and sleepng also suche effectes to come  
certaynely to passe as hee hath tolde them before, beleue hym  
in all other thinges, and honour him in many places with sa-  
crifyces of the blood and lyues of men, and odouriferous spices:  
And when God disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuyll  
hath spoken in oracle, whereby he is proued a lyer, he causeth the  
*Tequinas* to perswade the people that hee hath chaunged his  
mynd and sentence for some of their sinnes, or deuise some such  
lye as lyketh him best, beynge a kyfyl maister in such subtille and  
craftie deuises, to deceyue the simple and ignozant people, whiche  
hath small defence agaynst so mightie and craftie an abuersarie.  
And as they call the deuyll *Tuyra*, so doe they in many places  
call the Christians by the same name, thynkyng that they great-  
ly honour them thereby, as in deede it is a name very sute and  
agreeable

Cc. i.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

385



agreeable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng moze lyke Dragons then men, among these sypmle people.

Before thynhabitauntes of the Ilande of *Hispaniola* had receiued the Christian fayth, there was among them a secte of men, whiche liued solitarily in the desartes and woods, & led theyr lyfe in silence and abstinence, moze straighly then euer dyd the philosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of all thinges that lyue by blood, contented onely with such feruites, hearbes, and rootes, as the desartes and woods imynistred vnto them to cate: The professours of this secte were called *Piaces*. They gaue them selues to the knowledge of naturall thinges, and vled certayne secrete magicall operations and superstitions, wheremy they had familiaritie with spirites, whiche they allured into theyr owne bodes at such tymes as they would take vppon them to tell of thinges to come, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasion to call any of them out of the desartes for this purpose, theyr custome was to sende them a portion of theyr fyne bread of *Cazabbi* or *Mazium*, and with humble request and suite to desyre them to tell them of suche thinges as they would demaunde. After the request graunted, and the place and day appoynted, the *Piaces* commeth, with two of his disciples waytyng on hym, wheremy of the one byngeth with him a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a litle syluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he sitteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose, where hauyng his disciples, the one standyng on the one hande, and the other on the other, euen in the pcesence of the kyng and certayne of his nobles (for the common people are not admitted to these mysteries) and turnyng his face towarde the desarte, he begynneth his inchaunment, and calleth the spirite with loude voyce by certayne names, whiche no man vnderstandeth but hee and his disciples. After he hath done thus a whyle, if the spirite yet deferre his comyng, hee drynkethe of the layde water, and therewith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchaunment, and letteth him seife blood with a thorne, maruailously turnyng him seife, as wee reade of the furious Sybilles, not ceassyng vntyl the spirit be come: who at his commyng

entreteth



entrench into him, and ouerthroweth him, as it were a greyhound should ouerturne a Squerell, then for a space, hee seemeth to lye, as though hee were in great payne, or in a rapte, woonderfully tormentyng him selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the siluer bell continually. Thus when the agonie is past, and he lyeth quietly (yet without any sense or feelyng) the kyng, or some other in his stead, demaundeth of him what he desireth to know: and the spirit answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces*, with a directe and perfecte answer to all poyntes: Insomuche that on a tyme certayne Spanyarde beyng present at these mysteries with one of the kynges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shippes which they looked for out of Spayne, the spirite answered in the Indian tounge, and tolde them what day and houre the shippes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought, without sayling in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the Sunne or Moone (which they greatly feare and abhorre) he giueth a perfect answer, and the lyke of tempestes, famin, plentie, warre or peace, and such other things. When all the demaundes are finished, his disciples call him aloude, ryngyng the siluer bell at his eare, and blowyng a certayne powder into his nosethilles, whereby he is rapted as it were from a dead sleape, beyng yet somewhat heauy headed and saynte a good whyle after. Thus beyng agayne rewarded of the kyng with more bread, hee departeth agayne to the desartes with his disciples. But since the Christian faith hath been dispersed throughout the Ilande, these deuyllysh practises haue ceased, and they of the members of the deuyl, are made the members of Christ by baptisme, forsakynge the deuyl and his workes, with the bayne curiositie of desyre of knowledge of thinges to come, wherof for the most parte it is better to be ignozant, then with vexation to know that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermoze, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his householde seruantes, as well women as men whiche haue continually serued him, kyll them selues, helceuyng as they are taught by the deuyl *Tuyra*, that they whiche kyll them selues when the kyng dyeth, goe with him to heauen, and serue him in the same place and offyce as

Cc.ii.

they



they dyd before on the earth whyle hee lyued : and that all that refuse so to doe, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or otherwylse, theyr soules to dye with theyr bodyes, and to bee dissolued into ayre, and become nothyng, as doe the soules of Waggys, Byrdes, Fyshes, or other brute beastes : and that only the other may enioy the pryuilidge of immortallitie for euer, to serue the kyng in heauen . And of this false opinion cometh it, that they which sowe cozne, or set rootes for the kynges bread, and geather the same, are accustomed to kylle them selues, that they may enioy this pryuilidge in heauen, and for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of *Maizium*, and a bundle of *Iucca* (whereof theyr bread is made) to be burped with them in their graues, that the same may serue them in heauen, if perchappes there should lacke seedes to sowe, and therefore they take this with them, to begyn withall, vntil *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promises) proude them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe seene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauing in pryson the kyng of that prouince (who rebelled from the obedience of your maestie) and demaundayng of him to whom parteyned those sepulchures or graues which I saue in his house : hee answered, that they were of certayne Indians which slue them selues at the death of his father . And because they are ofentimes accustomed to burye great quantities of wrought gold with them, I caused twoo graues to be opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the graine of *Maizium*, & a bundle of *Iucca*, as I haue sayde . And demaundayng the cause hereof, of the kyng and the other Indians : they answered, that they that were burped there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylfull in sowyng of seedes, and makyng of bread, and seruantes to the kynges father, and to the ende that their soules should not dye with theyr bodyes, they slue them selues at the death of the kyng theyr maister, to lyue with hym in heauen, and to the intent that they myght serue him there in the same offyce, they reserued that *Maizium* and *Iucca*, to sowe it in heauen . Wherevnto I aunswere them in this maner, Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceyueth you, and howe all that hee teacheth you is false. You see howe in so long a tyme since they are dead, they haue not yet taken away this *Maizium* and *Iucca*, which





which is now putrified and wasyth nothyng, and not lyke to bee sown in heauen. To this the kynge replied, saying, in that they haue not taken it away, nor sown it in heauen, the cause is, that they chaunced to fynde enough there, by reason whereof they had no neede of this. To this erroure many thinges were sayd, which seemed of litle force to remoue him from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occupped of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe same fourme and colour, as hee appeareth vnto them in dyuers shapen and fourmes. They make also Images of goide, copper, and wood, to the same similitudes, in terrible shapen, and so variable, as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of saint Michaell tharchangell, or in any other place, where they paynte them of most horrible portiture. Lykewyse when the deuyl greatly intendeth to feare them, hee threatheneth to sende them great tempestes, whiche they call *Furacanas*, or *Haurachanas*, and are so vehement, that they ouerthrow many houses, and great trees. And I haue seene in mountaynes, full of many and great trees, that for the space of thre quarters of a league the mountayne hath been subuerted, and the trees ouerthrowen, and plucked out of the earth with the rootes: a thung doubletse so fearefull and terrible to beholde, that it may verply appeare to bee done by the hande of the deuyl. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in all places where the holy sacrament is reserued, the sayde tempestes are no moze so outragious, or so perillous as they were wont to bee.

Doctrine not  
worthy for a  
Christian man.

Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne, called *Torrida Zona*, or the Equinoctiall, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeere.



The landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hot, although they be otherwise temperate by the diuine prouidence: & therefore such fische or fysh as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not be preserued from putrification, except it be rostted, sodden, or perboy'd, the same day that it is kyl'd. And wheras I haue sayd, that

Cc.iii.

such



such regions are naturally hotte, and yet temperate by the prouidence of God, it is so in deede : and therefore not without cause the auncient aucthours were of opinion, that the burnt lyne, or *Torrída Zona*, where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shoulde be vnhabitable, by reason the Sun hath greater dominion in that place, then in any other of the sphere, remainyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne : For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficiall parte thereof to the deapth of a mans heygth, it is founde temperate, and within this space the trees and plants fasten and spread their rootes, and no deeper, extendyng the same as farre in breadth in the grounde as doe they? bryanches in the ayre, and enter no deeper into the grounde then I haue sayde, because that beneath the deapth of the sayde space of a mans heygth the earth is very hotte, the vpper part beyng temperate and very moyst, as well by reason of the abundaunce of water whiche falleth from heauen vpon that earth at certayne ordinarie seasons of the yecere, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brookes, spynges, and many bes, whereby the myghtie and supreme Lord which made these landes, hath most prudently provided for the preservation of the same.

There are also many rough and hygh mountaynes, with temperate ayre, and pleasaunt, cleare, and moderate myghtes : of the whiche particularitie the auncient wyriters hauyng no certayne knowledge, affirmed the said burnt line or *Torrída Zona*, or Equinoctiall, to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witnesse the contrary by testimonie of syght and feeling, as by most certayne senses, hauyng lyued many yeeres in these regions, by reason whereof better credite ought to be giuen to me, then to such as haue grounded their opinionion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the situation of these regions, you shall vnderstand that the coaste of the North sea, beyng in the gulse of *Vraba*, and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the Rhyppes arriue whiche come out of *Spayne*, is in the sixte degree and a halfe, and in the seuen, and from sixe and a halfe, vnto eyght, except a small poynt which entrech into the sea towarde the North. That poynt which of this lande and new parte of the worlde lyeth most towarde the East, is the cape of saint Augustine, which



is in the eyght degree: So that the sayd gulfe of *Vraba*, is distant from the Equinoctiall lyne, from a hundred & twentie, to a hundred and thirtie leagues, and thre quarters of a league, after that accompte of .xvii. leagues and a halfe for euery degree from pole to pole: and thus for a litle more or lesse, goeth all the coast. By reason whereof, in the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the foresayde gulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeere the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length: and if there bee any difference betweene them by reason of this small distance from the Equinoctiall, it is so litle, that in .xxiii. houres, making a naturall day, it can not bee percepued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men, and such as vnderstande the sphere: From hence the North starre is seene very lowe. And when the starres, whiche are called the guardens of the North starre, are vnder the Chariot, it can not be seene, because it is vnder the horizontall. And whereas I haue sayde before that it rayneth in these regions at certayne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deed: For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that which is in Spayne, where the greatestt colde of frost and rayne is in December and Ianuary, and the greatestt heate of sommer about saint Johns day at Hydsommer, or in the moneth of Iuly: But in golden Castile or *Beragna*, it is contrary, for the sommer and tyme of greatestt drought & without rayne, is at Christmas, and a moneth before, and a moneth after, & the tyme when it rayneth most, is about Hydsommer, and a moneth before, and a moneth after. And this season which they call wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeere, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner: but for that, that, in this tyme whiche they call wynter, the Sunne is hydde from theyr sightes, by reason of cloudes and rayne, more then at other tymes. Yet forasmuche as for the most part of the yeere they lyue in a cleare, open, and temperate ayre, they somewhat shynke and feele a litle colde durynge the tyme of the sayde moyst and cloudy ayre, although it be not colde in deed, or at the least such colde as hath any sensible sharpnesse.

Cc.iii.

..Of

Lden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

391



Of dyuers particuler thinges, as woormes, serpentes, beastes, foules, trees. &c.



Any other thinges might be sayd, and much differpng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thinges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of such thinges as come chiefly to my remembraunce, as most worthie to be noted, I will first speake of certayne litle and troublous beastes, which may seeme to bee engendred of nature to molest & vex men, to shewe them & giue them to vnderstand, how small and vyle a thing may offende and disquiet them, to shende that they may remember the princippall end for the which they were created, that is, to know their maker and procurer of their saluation by the way whiche is open to all Christian men, and all other which will open the eyes of theyr vnderstandpng. And although the thinges wherof wee entende nowe to speake, may seeme vyle and litle to be esteemed, yet are they worthy to bee noted and considered, to vnderstande the difference and variable workes of nature. So it is therefore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande, by the whiche as well the Christians as Indians doe trauayle, there are suche marshes and waters in the way, that they are sayne to go without breeches among the hearbes and weedes, by reason whercof, certayne smal beasts or woormes (which they cal *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue fast to their legges. These woormes are as litle as the pouder of beaten salt, and cleaue so fast, that they can by no meanes bee taken away, except the place bee noynted with oyle: and after that the legges be noynted a whyle with oyle, or the other partes where these litle tykes are fastened, they scrape the place with a knyfe, and so take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them, and burne them with fyre, and abyde great paynes in takyng them away by this meanes. Of other litle beastes whiche trouble men, and are engendred in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodyes, I say that the Christian men which trauayle into these partes, haue them but seldoine tymes, and that not past one or two, & this al-





so very seldome : For passyng by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse maketh difference of saylyng by the wynde called *Greco*, (that is, Northeast) and *Magistral* (that is, south-west) whiche is in the course of the *Ilandes of Azori*, they sayle but a litle way folowynge our viage by the west, but that all the lyle whiche the Christians cary with them, or are engendred in theyr heades, or other places of theyr bodyes, dye and utterly consume by litle and litle, and are not engendred in *India*, except in the heades of litle chyldren in those partes, aswell among the chyldren of the Christians whiche are bozne there, as also among the naturall *Indians*, who haue them commonly in theyr heades, and sometymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cuena*, whiche is a region contaynyng more then a hundred leagues in length, and embraaseth the one and the other coast of the *Northe sea*, and of the *East*. When these *Indians* are infected with this fylthynesse, they dyesse and cleanse one an other : And they that exercise this, are for the most part women, who eate all that they take, and haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that our men can not lyghtly attayne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to be considered: and this is, howe the Christian men, beyng there cleave from this fylthynesse of *India*, aswell in theyr heades as the rest of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to come agayne into *Europe*, and begyn to aryue in that place of the *Ocean sea* where we sayde before that these lyle dyed and forsoke them, sodenly in theyr repassyng by the same chyne (as though these lyle had tarped for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for the space of certayne dayes, although they change theyr shertes two or thre times in a day: These lyle are at first as litle as nittes, and growe by litle and litle, vntill they be of the byggenesse that they are in *Spain*. This haue I oftentimes proued, hauyng nowe foure tymes passed the *Ocean sea* by this viage. Besyde these wormes and vermyn whereof we haue spoken, there is another litle myscherous worme, whiche we may number among the kynnes of fleas, this pestilence the *Indians* call *Nigra*, and is muche lesse then a flea: it pearseth the fleshe of a man, and do launseth or cutteth the same (whyle  
in



in the meane tyme it can neyther be scene nor taken) that from  
 some it hath cut of theyr handes, and from other theyr feete,  
 vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynt the place with oyle,  
 and scrape it with a rasor. In the firme lande in golden  
 Castyle or *Beragua*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of  
 Spayne: they that are bytten of them, dye in short space,  
 for fewe lyue to the fourth day, except present remedy. Of  
 these, some are of lesse kynde then other, and haue theyr tayle  
 somewhat rounde, and leape in the ayre to assayle men, and  
 for this cause, some call this kynde of vipers *Tyro*: theyr byt-  
 tyng is most venomous, and for the most parte incurable.  
 One of them chanced to bite an Indian mayde whiche serued  
 me in my house, to whom I caused the Surgians to mynistre  
 theyr ordinary cure, but they coulde do her no good, nor yet  
 great one droppe of blood out of her, but onely a pelowe water,  
 so that she dyed the thyrde day for lacke of remedy, as the lyke  
 hath chanced to dyuers other: This mayde was of the age  
 of .xiiii. yeeres, and spake the Spanysh tongue as if she had  
 been bozne in Castyle: she sayde that the viper whiche byt her on  
 the foote, was two spannes long, or hyle lesse, and that to bite  
 her, she lept in the ayre for the space of moze then fyre pases, as  
 I haue hearde the lyke of other credible persons. I haue also  
 scene in the firme lande a kynde of adders, very small, and of  
 seuen or eyght foote long: these are so redde, that in the nyght  
 they appeare lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day seeme as  
 redde as bloodde, these are also venomous, but not so muche as  
 the vipers. There are other muche lesse, and shorzer, and blacker:  
 these come out of the ryuers, and wander sometymes farre  
 on the lande, and are lykewyse venomous. There are also o-  
 ther adders of a russet colour: these are somewhat bygger then  
 the viper, and are hurtful and venomous. There are lykewyse  
 an other sort of many colours, and very long: of these I sawe  
 one in the yeere of Christ .1515. in the Land of *Hispaniola*, neere  
 vnto the sea coastes, at the foote of the mountaynes called *Teder-  
 nales*, when this adder was slayne, I measure her, and founde  
 her to be moze then .xx. foote long, & somewhat moze then a mans  
 fyst in byggnesse: and although she had thre or foure deadly  
 woundes with a swoorde, yet dyed she not, nor stonke the  
 same

Vipers.

Adders.



same daye, insonmuche that her blood contynued warme all that tyme. There are also in the Harythes and delartes of the fyrme lande many other kyndes of Lysartes, Dragons, and other Dragons. diuers kyndes of Serpentes, whereof I entende not heere to speake muche, because I haue moze particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the West Indies. There are also Spydres of maruclous byggenesse, and I Spydres haue scene some with the bodye and legges bygger then a mans hande extened euery waye, and I once sawe one of suche byggenesse, that only her bodye was as bygge as a Sparrowe, and full of that Laune whereof they make theyr webbes: this was of a darke russet coloure, with eyes greater then the eyes of a Sparowe, they are venomous, and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also Scorpions, and dyuers other such venomous woymes. Whereby we may see, that where as naturall causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuite, they ceasse not to engender and byng forth both good and badde, accorpyng to the disposition of the matter, whiche they also doo partly dispose, as the philosphers affyrme. Furthermoze in the fyrme lande, there are many Coades, beyng very noxious and hurtfull by reason of theyr great multitude, they are not venomous, they are scene in great abundaunce in *Darien*, where they are so bygge that when they dye in the tyme of drought, the bones of some of them (and especially the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse, that they appeare to be the bones of Cattes, or of some other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters diminish, and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drought (as I haue sayde) they also consume therewith, vntyl the yeeere next folowpyng when the rayne and moysture encrease, at whiche tyme they are scene agayne. Neuerthelesse, at this present there is no such quantitie of them, as was wont to be, by reason that as the lande is better cultured by the Christians, as well by the fellyng of wooddes and shrubbes, as also by the pasture of Kyne, Horses, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this poison diminisheth daylye, whereby that region becomuneth moze holosome and pleasaunt: these Coades syng after thre or foure sortes, for some of them syng pleasauntly, other lyke ours of Spayne, some also whistle, and other some make an other



ether maner of noyle: they are lyke wyle of diuers coloures, as  
 some greene, some russet or gray, and some almost blacke,  
 but of all sortes they are great and fylthy, and noyous by reason  
 of theyr great multitude, yet are they not venemous as I haue  
 sayde. There are also a straunge kynde of Crabbes, whiche  
 come forth of certayne holes of the earth, that they them  
 selues make: the head and bodie of these make one rounde  
 thug, muche lyke vnto the hood of a Faulkon, hauyng foure  
 secte commyng out of the one syde, & as many out of the other:  
 they haue also two mouthes, like vnto a payre of small pincers,  
 the one bygger then the other, wherewith they byte, but doo  
 no great hurt, because they are not venemous: theyr skynne  
 and bodie is smooth, and thynne, as is the skynne of a man,  
 sayyng that it is somewhat harder, theyr coloure is russet, or  
 whyte, or blewe, and walke sydelong, they are very good to be  
 eaten, insomuche that the Christians trauallyng by the fynde  
 lande, haue been greatly nourysed by them, because they are  
 founde in maner euery where: in shape and forme they are  
 muche like vnto the Crabbe whiche we paynt for the signe Can-  
 cer, and like vnto those whiche are founde in Spayne in *Anda-  
 lusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber*, where it entreth into the sea, and  
 in the sea coastes there about, sayyng that these are of the water,  
 and the other of the lande: they are sometymes hurtfull, so that  
 they that eate of them dye, but this chaunceth only when they  
 haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples  
 wherewith the Canible archers poyson theyr arrowes, whereof  
 I wyll speake hereafter, and for this cause the Christians take  
 heede how they eate of these Crabbes, yf they fynde them neare  
 vnto the sayd apple trees. Furthemoze in these Indies, aswel in  
 the fynde lande, as in the *Illandes*, there is founde a kynde of  
 Serpentes, whiche they call *X. V. anas*, whiche some cal *Iuan-  
 nas*, these are terrible and feareful to syght, and yet not hurtful,  
 they are very delicate to be eaten, and it is not yet knowen whe-  
 ther they be beastes of the lande, or fyshes, because they lyue  
 in the water, and wander in the wooddes, and on the lande:  
 they haue foure feete, and are commonly bygger then Connies.  
 and in some places bygger then Otters, wch sayles lyke *Ly-  
 sartes* or *Cutes*: theyr skynne is spotted, and of the same  
 kynd

Crabbes.

Serpentes cal-  
led Iuanis.





bynde of limochnelle or bareness, although of dyuers colours: upon the rydge of theyr backes, they haue many long prickes, theyr teeth are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth, theyr thyrotes are long and large, reachyng from theyr beardes to theyr brestes, of the lyke skynne to the resydue of theyr bodyes: they are dumbe, and haue no voyce, or make any noyse, or crye, although they bee kept tyed to the foote of a cheite, or any other thyng, for the space of .xx. or .xxv. dayes, without any thyng to eate or drynke, except they geue them nowe and then a litle of the bread of *Cazabbi*, or some suche other thyng: they haue foure feete, and theyr fore feete as long as a mans synger, with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grasple or take holde of any thyng: they are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde, for fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of theyr horrible shape, except suche as haue ben accustomed to the beastes of these regions, whiche are moze horrible and feareful, as this is not, but onely in apparence: theyr fleshe is of muche better tast then the fleshe of Connies, and moze holsonne, for it hurteth none but onely suche as haue had the frenche poxe, insomuche that if they haue been touched of that infirmitie, although they haue ben whole of long tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte, and complayne of the eatyng of these *Iuamas*, as hath been often times prooued by experience. There are founde in the syrie lande certayne byrdes, so litle, that the whole body of one of them is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest synger of a mans hande, and yet is the bare body without the feathers not halfe so bygge: This byrde, besyde her litlenesse, is of suche besocitte and swyftnesse in slepyng, that who so seeth her slepyng in the ayre, can not see her flap or beate her winges after any other sort then do the Doxres, or humble bees, or Beetels: so that there is no man that seeth her flic, that would thynke her to be any other then a Doxre: they make their nestes accordyng to the propoztion of their bygnes, and I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a payre of golde weights, altogether hath waide no moze then .2. *Tomini*, which are in poise .24. graines, with the feathers, without the which she shoulde haue wayed somewhat lesse. And doubtlesse when I con-



sider the fynesse of the clawes & feete of these byzdes, I knowe  
 not wherunto I may better lykē them, then to the litle byzdes  
 whiche the lynniers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the  
 margent of churche bookes, and other bookes of diuine seruice.  
 Theyr feathers are of many saye colours, as golden, yelow, and  
 greene, besyde other variable colours, theyr beake is very  
 long for the propoztion of theyr bodies, and as fyne and subtile as  
 a sowyng neole: they are very hardy, so that when they see a  
 man clime y tree where they haue their nests, they flee at his face,  
 & stryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goyng, and returnyng with  
 such swyftnes, that no man woulde lyghtly beleue it, that hath  
 not seene it: and certaynly these byzdes are so litle, that I durst  
 not haue made mention hereof, if it were not that diuers other  
 which haue scene them as wel as I can beare witness of my say-  
 ing: they make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotton, wherof  
 there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr  
 purpose. But as touchyng the byzdes, foules, and beastes of  
 these Indies, because they are innumerable, both litle and great,  
 I intende not to speake muche heere, because I haue spoken  
 moze largely hereof in my generall hytroye of the Indies.  
 There is an other kynde of beastes scene in the firme lande,  
 whiche seemeth very strange and marueylous to the Christian  
 men to beholde, and much differyng from al other beastes whi-  
 che haue ben scene in other partes of the world: these beastes are  
 called *Bardati*, and are foure footed, hauyng their tayle and al the  
 rest of theyr bodyes couered onely with a skynne lyke the copert-  
 ture of a barbed hoise, or the checkered skinne of a Lisarte or Cro-  
 codile, of coloure betwene white and russet, inclynyng somwhat  
 moze to whyte. This beast is of fourme and shape muche lyke  
 to a barbed hoise, with his barbes and flankets in al poynts, and  
 from vnder that which is the barbe and coperture, the taile com-  
 meth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also & the eares  
 in theyr partes, and in fyne al thynges in lyke sozte as in a bar-  
 bed courser: they are of the bygnesse of one of these common  
 dogges, they are not hurtfull, they are fylthy, and haue theyr  
 habitation in certayne hyllockes of earth, where dygging with  
 their feete, they make theyr dens very deepe, & the hoises thereof,  
 in like maner as do Connies, they are very excellent to be eaten, &

are



are taken with nettes, and some also kylled with Crofbowes : they are likewise taken oftentymes when the husbandmen burne the stubble in lowpung tyme, or to remove the herbage for Kynne and other beastes. I haue oftentymes eaten of theyr flesh, which seemeth to me of better tast then Kyddes fleshe, and holosome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer been seene in these partes of the worlde, where the fyrr barbed hozes had theyr originall, no man woulde iudge but that the fourme and fashyon of the co-  
 perture of hozes furnyshed for the warres, was fyrr deuised by the syght of these beastes. There is also in the syrrme lande another beast, called *Orso Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beast in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the Beare of Spaine, Beares. and in maner of the same makpung, saue that he hath a muche longer snout, and is of euill syght : they are oftentymes taken on-  
 ly with staues, without any other weapon, and are not hurtful, they are also taken with dogges, because they are not naturally armed, although they bite somewhat, they are founde for the most part about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundance of Antes. For in these regions is engendred a cer-  
 tayne kynde of Antes, very litle and blacke, in the feedes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by the instinct of nature these Antes separate them selues to engender farre from the wooddes for feare of these Beares, the which because they are fearefull, vyle, and unarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees, vntyll very famine and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to feede on these Antes, cause them to come out of the woods to hunt for them : these Antes make a hillocke of earth to the heygth of a man, or somewhat moxe or lesse, and as hye as a great chest, & sometymes as hye as a Butte or a Hogthead, & as hard as a stone, so that they seeme as though they were stones, set by to limit the endes & confines of certayne lands. Within these hillocks, made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite litle Antes, the whiche may be geathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken : the whiche when it is sometymes moysted by rayne, and then dryed agayne by the heate of the Sonne, it breaketh, and hath certayne small ryftes, as litle and subtyle as the edge of a knyfe, and it seemeth that nature hath geuen sense to these Antes to synde  
Antes.  
suche

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



suche a matter of earth, wherewith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardnesse, that it may seeme a strong pauement made of lyme and stone: and whereas I haue proued and caused some of them to be broken, I haue founde them of such hardnesse, as yf I had not seene I could not haue beleueed, insomuch that they coude scarcely be broken with pykes of Iron, so strong fortresses doo these litle beastes make for theyr sauegard against theyr aduersarie the Beare, who is chiefly nourished by them, and geuen them as an enimie, accordyng to the common prouerbe whiche sayeth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimsanchi il suo Bargello*, that is, there is no man so free, that hath not his persecutor or priuie enimie. And here when I consyder the maruellous prouidence whiche nature hath geuen to these litle bodics, I cal to remembzance the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such litle beastes, he sayeth thus, Why do we marueile at the Towrebearyng shoulders of Elephanes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many senses & such industry in such litle bodics? Where is hearing, smelling, seeing, and feeling, yea, where are the veynes and arteries (without which no beast can lyme or moue) in these so litle bodics, whereof some are so small that theyr whole bodics can scarcely be seene of our eyes: What shall we then saye of the partes of the same? Yet euen among these there are many of such sagacity and industry, as the like is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no nor yet in man, &c. But to returne to the history. This enimie whiche nature hath geuen to these litle beastes, bleseth this maner to assaile them: When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the Antes lie hid as in theyr fortress, he putteth his tongue to one of the ryftes whereof we haue spoken, being as subtile as the edge of a sword, and therewith contynuall lickyng, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of his mouth beyng of suche property, that by contynuall lickyng the place, it enlargeth the ryft in such sort by litle and litle, that at the length he easely putteth in his tongue, whiche he hath very long and thynne, and muche disproportionate to his bodie, and when he hath thus made free passage for his tongue into the hyllocke, to put it easely in and out at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it rest a good space, untill a great quantity





ritie of the Antes (whose nature relopcech in heate and moyster) haue laden his tongue, and as many as he can conteyne in the hollownesse thereof, at which tyne hee sodenly draweth it into his mouth, and eateth them, and returneth agayne to the same practise immediatly, buttill he haue eaten as many as him lysteth, or as long as he can reache any with his tongue. The fleshe of this beast, is filthy and vnlaury, but by reason of the extreme thyrst and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst commynge into these partes, they were enforced to proue all thinges, and so fell to the eatyng of these beastes: but when they had found moze delycate meates, they fel into hatred with this. These Antes haue thappearance of the place of theyr entraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde, and this at so litle a hole, that it coulde hardely be founde, if certayne of them were not scene to passe in and out: but by this way the Beares could haue no suche power to hurte them as aboue at the sayde ryftes, as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beast, whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes call *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is, the lycht dogge, whereas it is one of the slowest beastes in the world, and so heauy and dull in mouyng, that it can scarcely goe fyfte pases in a whole day: these beastes are in the firme lande, and are very strange to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes, they are about two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse, but when they are very young, they are somewhat moze grosse then long: they haue foure subtile feete, and in euery of them foure claws lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togeather, yet are nother theyr claws or their feete able to susteyne theyr bodies from the grounde, by reason whercof, and by the heauynesse of theyr bodies, they drawe theyr bellies on the grounde: theyr neckes are hygh and streyght, and all equall lyke the pestle of a mortar, which is altogether equall euen vnto the toppe, without making any proportion or similitude of a head, or any dyfference except in the noddle, and in the toppes of theyr neckes: they haue very rounde faces muche lyke vnto Owles, and haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle, which maketh theyr faces seeme somewhat moze long then large: they haue small eyes and rounde, and nostrylles lyke vnto Spunkys:

A strange  
 beast which  
 seemeth a kind  
 of Camleon.

Dd.i.

they

Lden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



they haue litle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes from one syde to an other, as though they were astonysed: theyr chiefe desyre and delyghte is to cleaue and sticke fast vnto trees, or some other thyng whereby they may clyme aloft, and therfore for the most parte, these beastes are founde bypon trees, wherunto cleauyng fast, they mount by by litle and litle, staying them selues by theyr long clawes: the colour of theyr heare, is betwene russet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the heare of a Weasel: they haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much differing from other beastes, for they syng onely in the nyght, and that continually from tyme to tyme, syngyng euer syxe notes one hygher then an other, so fallyng with the same, that the first note is the hyghest, and the other in a baser tune, as if a man shoulde say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt*, so this beast sayeth, *Ha, ba, ba, ba, ba, ba*. And doubtlesse, it seemeth vnto mee, that as I haue sayde in the Chapter of the beast called *Bardati*, that those beastes myght bee the original and document to imharbe hoyses: euen so, the fyrst inuention of musycke myght seeme by the hearyng of this beast, to haue the fyrst principles of that science, rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But now to returne to the hystorie. I say that in a shorthe space after this beast hath song, and hath paused a whyle, shee returneth agayne to the selfe same song, and doeth this onely in the nyght, and not in the day: By reason whereof, and also because of her euyl sight, I thynke her to bee a nyght beast; and the friende of darkenesse. Sometymes the Christian men fynde these beastes, and byyng them home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all about with theyr naturall slownesse, insonmuch that nother for theatnyng or pryckyng they will moue any faster then theyr naturall and accustomed pace. And if they fynde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mount to the toppe of the hyghest bchaunche thereof, where they remaine continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes, without eatyng of any thyng, as farre as any man can iudge. And whereas I my selfe haue kept them in my house, I coulde neuer percepyue other but that they lyue onely of apple, and of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, because they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turue theyr heades and mouthes towardes  
that



that parte where the wynde bloweth most, whereby may be consydered that they take most pleasure in the ayre. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauyng very litle mouthes: they are not venomous or noyous any way, but altdgeather brutyshe, and bitterly vnyprofitable, and without commoditie yet knowen to men, sayng onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate the inspyrite power of God, who delygtheth in the varietie of creatures, whereby appeareth the power of his incomprehenible wysedome and maicstie, so farre to excede the capacitie of mans vnderstanding. In these regions there are lykewyse founde certayne foules or byrdes, which the Indians call *Alcatraz*: these are muche bigger then Geese, the greatest parte of theyr feathers are of russet colour, and in some partes yelow, theyr bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length, and very large neare to the head, and growyng small towards the poynte, they haue great and large throttes, and are muche lyke to a foule which I sawe in Flaunders in Brusselles in your maiesties pällace, whiche the Flemynges call *Haina*: And I remember that when your maiestie dnyed one day in your great hall, there was brought to your maiesties ptesence a Caulderne of water with certayne fishes alyue, whiche the sayde foule dyd eatte by whole, and I thynke veryly that that foule was a foule of the sea, because shee had feete lyke foules of the water, as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are lykewyse foules of the sea, and of suche greatnesse, that I haue seene a whole coate of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama*, in the yere. 1521. And forasmuche as in that coast of *Panama*, there passeth and fleeth a great multitude of these *Alcatrazi*, beyng a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner heereof, as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowre ptesent in your maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Your maiestie shall therefore vnderstande, that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* ryleth and falleth two leagues and moze from syxe houres to syxe houres: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryueith so neare to the houses of *Panama*, as doeth our sea (called *Mare Mediteraneum*) in *Barzalona*, or in *Naples*: and when the sayd increasynge of the sea commeth, there commeth also therewith suche a multitude of the smal fishes called *Sardines*, that it is so marueilous a thyng to behold,

Do, it.

behold,

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

403



beholde, that no man would beleue it that hath not seene it. In  
 so much that the *Cacique* (that is) the kyng of that lande, at such  
 tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly, as he was commaun-  
 ded by your maiesties gouernour, to bypnyng ordinarily thre ca-  
 noas or barkes full of the sayde *Sardynes*, and to vnlade the  
 same in the market place, whiche were afterwarde by the ru-  
 ler of the citie diuided among the Christian men, without any  
 coste or charge to any of them: Insomuche that if the people  
 had been a much greater multitude then they were, and as ma-  
 ny as are at this present in *Toledo*, or more, and had none other  
 thyng to lyue by, they myght haue been sufficiently susteyned  
 by these *Sardynes*, besyde the ouerplus which should haue re-  
 mayned. But to returne to the foules, whereof we haue spo-  
 ken. As the sea commeth, and the *Sardynes* with the same,  
 euen so lykewyse come the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith, and flee  
 continually ouer it, in such a multytude, that they appeare to co-  
 uer the vpper parte of flooze of the water, and thus continue in  
 mountyng and fallyng from the ayre to the water, and from the  
 water to the ayre, duryng all the tyme of their fisyng: and alsoone  
 as they haue taken any of these *Sardynes*, they flee about the wa-  
 ters, and eate them incontynently, and sodenly returne agayne  
 to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without  
 ceaslyng: in lyke maner when the sea falleth, they folowe theyr fy-  
 shyng as I haue sayde. There goeth also in the company of these  
 foules, an other kynde of foules, called *Coda inforcata*, (that is)  
 the forked taylor, whereof I haue made mention before, & alsoone  
 as the *Alcatraz* mouereth from the water with her pray of the  
*Sardynes*, sodenly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many  
 strokes, and so persecuteeth her, that shee causeth her to let fall the  
*Sardynes* which shee hath in her mouth: the which alsoone as  
 they are falne, and before they yet touche the water, the *Coda*  
*inforcata* catcheth them euen in the fall, in suche sorte, that it is  
 a great pleasure to beholde the combat betweene them all the  
 day long. The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is suche, that the  
 Christian men are accustomed to sende to certayne Ilandes and  
 rockes which are neare about *Panama*, with theyr boates or bar-  
 kes to take these *Alcatrazzi*, whyle they are yet yong, and can  
 not flee, and kyll as many of them with stanes as they will, buttill  
 they





they haue therewith laden theyr Barkes or Canoas: these young ones are so fat and well fedde, that they can not bee eaten, and are taken for none other intent, but onely to make grease for candles to burne in the wyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well, and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easly. After this maner, and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kylde: & yet it seemeth that the number of them that fythe for Sardynes doe dayly increase. There are other foules called *Passere sem-*  
*pie.* that is, simple sparowes: these are somewhat lesse then  
 Seamewes, and haue theyr feete lyke vnto great Halardes,  
 and stande in the water sometymes, and when the shyppes sayle  
 fyfte or a hundred leagues about the Ilandes, these foules be-  
 holdyng the shyppes comyng toward them, breake theyr  
 flight, and fall downe vpon the sayle yardes, mastes, and ca-  
 bles thereof, and are so simple and folysh, that they tary vn-  
 tyll they may easly bee taken with mens handes, and were ther-  
 fore called of the maryners simple sparowes: they are blacke,  
 and vpon theyr blacke, haue theyr head and shoulders of  
 feathers of a darke russet colour: they are not good to bee eaten,  
 although the maryners haue sometymes been enforced to eate  
 them. There is an other kynde of byrdes in the firme land, which  
 the Christians call *Picuti*, because they haue very great beakes,  
 in respecte of the lidenesse of theyr bodies, for theyr beakes  
 are very heauy, and waye moze then theyr whole bodies be-  
 syde: these byrdes are no bygger then Quayles, but haue a  
 muche greater bulhement of feathers, insomuche that theyr fea-  
 thers are moze then theyr bodies: theyr feathers are very fayre,  
 and of many variabill coloures, theyr beakes are a quarter of a  
 yarde in length or moze, and bendyng downe toward the earth,  
 and three fyngers brode neare vnto the head: theyr tongues are  
 very quylls, wherewith they make a great byfkyng: they make  
 holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make their  
 nestes. And surely these byrdes are marueylous to beholde,  
 for the great dyfference whiche they haue from all other byrdes  
 that I haue scene, as well for theyr tongues (which are quylls  
 as I haue sayd) as also for the strangenesse of their sight, & dispo-  
 sition of their great beakes, in respect of the rest of their bodies.  
 There are no byrdes found that prouide better for the safegard of  
 their

Dd.iii.

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



they young in the tyme of they breeding, to be without daunger of wyld cattles, that they enter not into they nestes to destroy their egges or young, and this as well by the strange maner of buyldyng their nestes, as also by they owne defence: and therefore when they perceyue that the cattles appoche toward them, they enter into they nestes, and holdyng they beakes toward the entrance of the same, stande at they defence, and so bere the cattles, that they cause them to leaue their enterpyse. There are also other byrdes or sparowes, which the Christians by contrary effecte call *Matti*, that is fooles: Whereas neuerthelesse there is no byrde that sheweth more wyt and craft in defendyng her young from pryel. These byrdes are litle, & in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then our *Thushes*, they haue certayne whyte feathers in they neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpnesse of sense as haue the byrdes or *Hyes* called *Gazzuole*, they sildometymes lyght vppon the earth: they make they nestes in trees separated from other, because the wyld cattles (called *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape from tree to tree, not descendyng to the grounde for feare of other beastes, except when they are enforced by thirst to come downe to drinke, at such times as they are sure not to bee molested, and for this cause doe not these byrdes make they nestes but in trees farre diuided from other, they make them of a cubite in length, or more, after the maner of bagges or litle sakes, large at the boitome, and growyng narrower and narrower toward the mouth, whereby they are fastened, hauyng the hole wherewith they enter into the sake, of suche byggennesse as may onely suffyce to receyue them. And to the ende that the cattles may not deuour they young, if they chaunce to moue: vppon the trees where they haue they nestes, they vse an other craft, which is, to make they nestes in thicke braunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and strong thornes, implicate and set in suche order, that no man is able to make the lyke, so that the cattles can by no meanes put they legges into the hole of the neste to take out the young byrdes, as well for the sharpenesse of the thornes, as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the young birds rest without daunger of their enemye: for some of they nestes beyng

folpthe sparrowes.



three or foure spannes in length, the legge of the cattē can not  
 reach to the bottome thereof. They vse also an other policie,  
 which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree, the which  
 they doe for one of these two causes: that is, that eether of theyr  
 stōne naturall disposition they are accustomed to goe in great  
 multitudes, and reioyce in the company of theyr owne generati-  
 on, as doe the byrdes whiche wee call *Stares*, or els to the in-  
 tent that if it should so chaunce that the cattē should clyme the  
 trees where they make theyr nestes, they myght bee a greater  
 company to resyst and molest the cattē, at whose appoche they  
 make a fearefull and terrible crye, whereby the cattē are put to  
 flight. Furthermoze, in the sarme lande, and in the Flandes, there  
 are certayne byrdes called *Piche*, or *Gazzuole*, somewhat lyke *Cazzuole*.  
 vnto those which we call *Woodwalles*, or *Woodpeckes*, beyng  
 lesse then ours of Spayne: these are altogether blacke, and goe  
 hopping and leapping, theyr beakes are also blacke, and of the  
 same fashon as are the *Hoppingtays* beakes, they haue long tay-  
 les, and are somewhat bygger then *Stares*. There are other  
 byrdes called *Pintadelli*, which are lyke vnto certayne greene byr-  
*Pintadelli*.  
 des, which the Italpans call *Fringuelli*, and are of seuen colours:  
 these byrdes for feare of the cattē, are euer wont to make  
 theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers, or the sea, where the  
 bchaunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a litle  
 weyght they may bowe downe to the water: theyr nestes  
 are made so neare the toppes of the bchaunches, that when the  
 cattē come thereon, the bchaunches bende towarde the water,  
 and the cattē turne backe agayne for feare of falling: For al-  
 though no beast in the worlde bee moze malicious then this,  
 yet whereas the most parte of beastes are naturally inclined to  
 swymme, this cattē hath no maner of aptensse therevnto, and  
 is therefore soone drowned or stranged in the water, and by a  
 priuie sense of nature feareth the danger which he can not escape.  
 These byrdes make their nestes in such sort, that although they  
 be wette and filled with water, yet doe they so sodeynly ryle by a-  
 gayne, that the young byrdes are not thereby hurt or drowned.  
 There are also many *Nyghtyngales*, and other byrdes which  
 syng marueylously with great melodie and dyfference in  
 Dd.iiii. syng.



lynggng: these bydes are of marueylous dyuers colours the one from the other, some are altogether yelow, and some other of so excellent, delectable, and hygh a colour, as it were a Rubye, other are also of dyuers and variable colours, some of fyue colours, and other some all of one colour, beyng all so saye and beautifull, that in byghthe and shynng they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy, or other prouinces of Europe: Many of these are taken with nettes, lyne throgges, and spynges of dyuers soptes. Dyuers other soptes of great foules lyke vnto Eagles, and such other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande, of suche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to describe them all particularly: and forasmuche as I haue more largely increated hereof in my generall bystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requysite heere to make anye further mention of the same.

great foules.

Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Cocus,

Here is both in the firme lande and the Ilands, a certayne tree called *Cocus*, beyng a kynde of Date trees, & haung their leaues of the selfe same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growing, for the leaues of this *Cocus* growe out of the trunckes of the tree, as doe the fingers out of the hand, wreaching them selues one within an other, & so spreading abode: these trees are hygh, & are founde in great plentie in the coast of the sea of *Sur*, in the province of *Caci-quo Chimau*. These date trees byng sooth a fruit after this sort: being altogether vnite as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the head of a man, & from the superficial part to the middell, which is the fruit, it is inuolued & covered with many webbs much lyke vnto those birds of towe which they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this tow or web, the East Indians make a certayne kynd of cloth, of thre or foure saytes, and cordes for the sayles of shippes: but in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes, or this cloth that may be made of the fruite of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage





of cotion of the gossampine trees. The fruite which is in the  
 myddell of the sayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as  
 a mans fist, and sometymes thyle as bygge, and moze: It is  
 in fourme lyke unto a walnutte, or some other rounde thyng,  
 somewhat moze long then large, and very harde, the rynde of  
 hark hereof, is as thicke as the cycke of letters of a ryall of  
 plate, and within, there cleauech fast to the rynde of the nutte  
 a carnositie or substance of coornel, of the thychenesse of halfe  
 a synger, or of the least synger of the hande, and is very whete,  
 lyke unto a saye Almonde, and of better taste and moze plea-  
 saunt. When this fruite is chewed, there remaine certayne  
 crummes, as do the lyke of Almondes: Yet if it be swallowed  
 downe, it is not displeasunt. For although that after the iuice  
 or moysture be gone downe the throte before the saide crummes  
 be swallowed, the rest whiche is eaten, seeme somewhat sharpe or  
 sower, yet doth it not so greatly offende þe tast, as to be cast away.  
 Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree,  
 they use not to eate of the saide carnositie of fruite, but first beating  
 it very muche, and then straynyng it, they drawe a mylke there-  
 of, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of  
 much substance, the whiche the Christian men of thos regions  
 put in the tostes or cakes which they make of the graine of *Ma-  
 zion* wherof they make theyr bread, or in other bread as we put  
 bread in porrage: so that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*,  
 the tostes are moze excellent to be eaten without offence to the  
 stomake: they are so pleasunt to the taste, and leave it adwell  
 satisfed as though it had been delicyed with many delycate dy-  
 shes. But to procede further, your maiestie shal vnderstande,  
 that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddell  
 of the sayde carnositie a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full  
 of a most cleare and excellent water, in suche quantitie as may  
 fyll a great egge shell, or moze, or lesse, accordyng to the bygge-  
 nesse of the *Cocus*, the whiche water swerth, is the most substan-  
 tiall, excellent, and precious to be drunke, that may be founde  
 in the world: insomuch that in the moment when it passeth  
 the palate of the mouth, and begynneth to go downe the throte,  
 it seemeth that from the sole of the foote, to the crowne of the  
 head, there is no parte of the bodye but that feelth grete  
 comfort

I haue serued  
 one of these  
 fruities opened,  
 the whiche  
 when it was  
 whole, if it  
 were shaken  
 the water was  
 harde hoggs  
 sperrin as it  
 were in a bot-  
 tle, but in tyme  
 it consumed  
 and was partly  
 by congelation  
 to a saite sub-  
 stance.



comfote thereby : as it is doubtlesse one of the most excellent  
 thynges that may be tasted vppon the earth, and suche as I  
 am not able by wytyng or tongue to expresse . And to pro-  
 ceede yet further, I say that when the meate of this fruite is  
 taken from the vessell thereof, the vessell remaineth as saye  
 and meate as though it were pulpybed, and is without of co-  
 lour inclynng towarde blacke, and thyneth or glysereth very  
 saye, and is within of no lesse delicatenesse . Suche as haue  
 accustomed to dlynke in these vesselles, and haue been troubled  
 with the diseale called the frettyng of the guttes, say that they  
 haue by experience founde it a marueylous remedie agaynst that  
 diseale, and that it breaketh the stone, and prouoketh vrine.  
 This fruite was called *Cocus*, for this cause, that when it is taken  
 from the place where it cleaueth fast to the tree, there are scer-  
 two holes, and aboue them two other natural holes, whiche alto-  
 geather do represent the gesture and figure of the cattes called  
*Mammoni*, that is, *Hunkeys*, when they crye, which crye the  
 Indians call *Coca*, but in very deede, this tree is a kinde of Date  
 trees, and hath the same effecte to heale frettyng of the guttes,  
 that *Plinie* describeth all kynnds of Date trees to haue . There  
 are furthermore in the firme lande, trees of suche byggenesse  
 that I dare not speake therof, but in place where I haue so ma-  
 ny wytnesses whiche haue seene the same as well as I . I saye  
 therfore, that a league from *Dariena* or the citie of *Santa Maria*  
*Antiqua*, there passeth a rpuer very large and deepe, which is cal-  
 led *Curi*, ouer the which the Indians had layde a great tree, so  
 trauesing the same, that it was in the shade of a bydge, the whi-  
 che I my selfe with vpuers other that are at this present in your  
 maiesties court, haue oftentimes passed ouer . And forasmuche  
 as the said tree had line long there, and by þ great weight therof  
 was so thponke downewarde, and partly couered with water,  
 that none coulde passe ouer it, but were wette to the knee, I  
 beyng then in the yeere . 1522. the official or Justice in that citie  
 at your maiesties appoyntment, caused an other great tree to be  
 layde in that place, whiche in lyke maner trauesed the rpuer,  
 and reached more then fytie foorse over the further syde : This  
 tree was exceeding great, and rested aboue the water more  
 then two cubytes, in the fall, it cast downe all such other trees as  
 were

Great trees.



were within the reache thereof, and discovered certayne bynes, whiche were so laden with blache grapes of pleasaunt taste, that they satsfied more then fiftie persons whiche ate theyr fyl thereof. This tree in the thickest part thereof, was more then fiftene spannes thicke, and was neuerthelesse but litle in respect of many other trees whiche are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates thereof (which they call *Canoas*.) of suche byggenesse, being all one whole tree, that some conteyne a hundred men, some a hundred and thirtie, and some more, haing neuerthelesse such boyde space within the same, that there is left sufficient roome to passe to and fro throughout all the *Canoas*. Some of these are so large, besyde the length, that they conteyne more then ten or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with two sayles, as with the maister sayle and the tryncket, which they make of very good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes, or in any other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kyng wherof rebellyng from the obedience of your maiestie, was pursued by me, and taken prisoner: at whiche tyme I with myr companie, passed ouer a very bygh mountayne, full of great trees, in the top wherof, we founde one tree, whiche had three rootes, or rather diuisions of the roote about the earth, in forme of a triangle, or treurt, so that betweene euery foote of this triangle or thre seete, there was a space of twentie foote betweene euery foote, and this of such hegght about the earth, that a laden Cart of those wherewith they are accustomed to byng home coine in the tyme of harnest in the kyngdome of *Toledo* in *Spainne*, myght easly haue passed through euery of those partitions or wyndowes which were betweene the thre seete of the sayd tree. From the earth upwarde to the trunk of the tree, the open places of the diuisions betweene these thre seete, were of suche hegght from the ground, that a footeman with a *Janekin* was not able to reache the place where the sayde seete toynd together in the trunk or bodie of the tree, whiche grew of great hegght in one peece, and one whole bodie, or euer it spread in banches, whiche it did not before it exceeded in hegght the Coloupe of *Sainct Romane* in the cite of *Toledo*: from whiche hegght and upward, it spread very great and strong banches.

A marueptous tree.

Among

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Among certayne Spaniards whiche clymed this tree, I my selfe was one, and when I was ascended to the place where it begonne to spreade the bryanches; it was a maruelous thying to beholde a great countrey of suche trees towarde the pꝛouince of Abayme. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certayne *Besuchi*, (wherof I haue spoken befoze) which grew wreathed about the tree, in suche sort that they seemed to make a scalpyng Ladder. Euery of the soylayd thre feete whiche boze the bodie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thickenesse, and where they ioyned all together about the Trunke or bodie of the tree, the pꝛincipall Trunke was moze then fourtie and syue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees growe: the mountayne of thre footed trees. And this whiche I haue now declared, was srene of all the companie that was there with me when (as I haue sayde befoze) I tooke kyng *Gnaturo* pꝛysoner in the peere. 1522. Many thynge moze myght heere be spoken as touchyng this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees sounde of diuers sortes and dyfference, as sweete Cedar trees, blacke Date trees, and many other, of the whiche some are so heauye that they cannot floote about the water, but syncke immediatly to the bottoome, and other agayne as lyght as a Cozke. As touchyng all whiche thynge I haue wrytten moze largely in my generall histozie of the Indies. And forasmuche as at this present I haue entred to entreat of trees, befoze I passe any further to other thynge, I wyll declare the maner howe the Indians kinde fyre, only with wood and without fire, the maner wherof is this. They take a peece of wood, of two spannes in length, as bygge as the least synger of a mans hand, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a strong kynde of wood whiche they keepe only for this purpose: and where they entend to kyndle any fire, they take two other peeces of wood, of the dypest and lyghtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast together one with an other, as close as two syngers ioyned: in the myddest or betweene these, they put the popnt of the fyrst litle staffe made of harde and strong woodde, whiche they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde about continually in one place betweene the two peeces of woodde which lye bounde together vpon the earth, whiche

Repylyng of  
fyre without  
fyre.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





whiche by that incessant rubbing and chafing, are in those  
 space kyndled, and take fyre. I haue also thought good  
 here to speake somewhat of suche thynges as come to my re-  
 membrance of certayne trees whiche are founde in this lande,  
 and sometime also the lyke haue been scene in Spayne.  
 These are certayne putrified trunks, whiche haue laye so  
 long rottyng on the earth, that they are very whyte, and shyne  
 in the nyght lyke burning fyrebrands, and when the Spa-  
 nyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende prynciply in the  
 nyght to make warre and invade any prouince; when case  
 so requyret that it shalbe necessary to goe in the nyght, in  
 such places where they knowe not the way, the foremost Chri-  
 stian man whiche guydeth the way, associate with an Indian  
 to directe hym therein, taketh a litle starre of the sayde woodde,  
 whiche he putteth in his cappe, hangyng behynde on his shoul-  
 ders, by the lycht whereof he that foloweth next to hym, direc-  
 teth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre  
 behynde hym, by the shynyng whereof the thyrde foloweth the  
 same way, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this  
 meanes none are losse or stragle out of the way. And sozasmuch  
 as this lycht is not scene very farre, it is the better policie for  
 the Christians, because they are not thereby disclosed before they  
 invade theyr enemies. Furthermoze as touchyng the natures  
 of trees, one particuler thyng seemeth woorthy to be noted,  
 whereof Plinie maketh mention in his naturall hystoie, where  
 he sayth that there are certayne trees whiche contynue euer  
 greene, and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the Bay tree, the  
 Cedar, the Orange tree, & the Olive tree, with such other, of the  
 whiche in altogether I name not pass fyre or fyre. To this  
 purpose, I say, that in the Landes of these Indies, and also  
 in the spaine lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde  
 two trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme: For al-  
 though I haue diligently searched to knowe the truth hereof,  
 yet haue I not scene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of  
 them whiche we haue brought out of Spayne into these regi-  
 ons, as Orange trees, Limons, Cedars, Palmes, or Date  
 trees, and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions,  
 except onely *Cassia*, whiche loseth his leaues, and hath a greater  
 thyng

Putrified  
 woodde shyn-  
 yng in the  
 nyght.

*Plinie.*

Trees whiche  
 contynue euer  
 greene.

*Cassia.*



thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: whiche is, that whereas all other trees and plantes of India spreade theyr rootes no deeper in the earth then the deapth of a mans heygth, or somewhat more, not descenndyng any further into the grounde, by reason of the great heate whiche is founde beneath that deapth, yet woock *Cassia* peacke further into the ground, vntyll it fynd water: whiche by the Philosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a thynne and watery radicall moysture to suche thynges as huate theyr nourishment thereof, as fat and vinctuous groundes with temperate heate, yelde a salt and firme moysture to suche thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that suche trees lose not theyr leaues, as the sayde thynne and watery moysture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde effecte whiche is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plant in all these parties.

All secrets  
thyng.

Wherall  
moysture.

Of Reedes or Canes.



I have not thought it comenient in the cha-  
pitule before, to speake of that wherof I in-  
tend nowe to intreate, of reedes or canes, to  
the intent that I woulde not myngle them  
with plantes or trees, being thinges of them  
selues woocky to be particularly obserued.  
As it is therfore, that in the firme land there  
are many sortes of reedes, so that in many places they make their  
houses thereof, couerynge them with the toppes of the same, and  
making theyr walles of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde be-  
fore: and among these kyndes of reedes, there is one so great,  
that the canes thereof are as bigge as a mans legge in þ knee, and  
three spannes in length from ioynt to ioynt, or more, insomuch that  
euery of them is of capacite to contayne a litle bucket of water.  
In this kynde, there are founde some greater, and some lesse, of  
the whiche some they vse to make quyers for arrowes. There  
is founde an other kynde, whiche surely is maruylous, being  
litle bigger then a Raulyn, the canes wherof are longer then  
two spannes: these reedes growe one farre from an other, as  
some tymes twentie or thirtie paces, and sometymes also two  
or three leagues: they growe in maner in all prouinces in the  
Indies,

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Indies, and grabe were to very hygh trees, wherunto they  
 leane, and creepe by to the toppes of they branches, whiche  
 they insyafe, and descende agayne betwene to the earth. They  
 canes are full of most cleare water, without any manner of taste  
 or savour, eyther of the canes, or of any other thing, and suche  
 as yf it were taken out of the freshest spring in the world, nor  
 yet is it knowen that ever it hurt any that drinke therof. For it  
 hath oftentimes so chaunced, that as the Christian men have tra-  
 vailed in these regions in desolate wastes, where for lacke of wa-  
 ter they have been in great danger to die for thirst, they have es-  
 caped that perill by reason that they founde the sayd reedes, of the  
 water of whose canes they have drinke a great quantitie, with-  
 out any hurt thereof ensuing. Therfore when they fynde these  
 in any place, they make water vessels of the canes thereof, and  
 carry as many of them full of water as may suffice for one dayes  
 journey: and sometime they carry so many, that they take for every  
 man two or three quarters of water, which may serue them for  
 many dayes, because it doth not corrupt, but remaineth still  
 fresh and good.

There are also certayne plantes, whiche the Christians call  
*Platani*. These are as hygh as trees, and become as byg in the  
 trunk as the knee of a man, or moxe. From the foote to the  
 toppe, they beare certayne long and large leaves, being moxe  
 then three spannes in largenesse, & about ten or twelue in length:  
 the whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remaineth  
 whole in the myddell. In the myddell of this plant, in the  
 highest part thereof, there groweth a cluster with fourtie or fyf-  
 tye *placans* about it, every of them being a spanne and a halfe in  
 length, and as byg as a mans arme in the small, or moxe, or lesse,  
 accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe: they  
 have a rinde not very thicke, and easie to be broken, being  
 within altogether full of a substance lyke unto the mary of the  
 bone of an Ox, as it appeareth when y rinde or bache is taken  
 from the same. This cluster ought to be taken from the plant,  
 when any one of the *placans* begin to appeare yelowe, at which  
 tyme they take it, and hang it in they houses, where all the  
 cluster useth to drye, with all his *placans*. This cluster is a  
 very good fruite, and when it is opened, and the rinde taken  
 off.



**Figs.**

of, there are founde within it many good type Fygges, whiche beinge collect, or stirred in an Ouen, in a close pot, or some suche other thing, are of pleasaunt tast, much lyke to the consuetude of Honey: they putrifie not on the sea so soone as some other frutes do, but conserue sycereen wytes and more, yf they be gathered somewhat greene: they seme more delicate on the sea then on the land, not for that they any thing encrease in goodnesse on the sea, but because that wheras on the sea other chynges are lacking, wherof is plentie on the land, those meates seme of best tast, whiche facile present necessitie. This trunke of fygg which byngeth sooth the sayd cluster, is a whole peere in growing and bynging sooth frutes, in which tyme it hath put sooth rounde about it ten or twelue fygges, as bygge as the hert of principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in bynging sooth of clusters, wch frutes lykwyse at theyr tyme, and also in bynging sooth other and many fygges, as is sayde before. From the whiche fygges or trunks, as soone as the cluster of the frute is taken away, the plant begyntheth to wyte and wyther, whiche then they take out of the grounde, because it doth none other then occupie it in dayne, and without profit. They are so many, and do so marueylously encrease and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner incredible. They are exceeding moyst, insomuch that when they are plucked vp from the place where they growe, there issueth sooth a great quantitie of water, aswel out of the plant, as out of the place where it grewe, in suche sort, that al the moysture of the earth lurre about, myght seme to be gathered together about the trunke or blocke of the sayd plant, wch the frutes wherof, the Antes are so farre in loue, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes: so that for the multitude thereof, it sometyme so chaunceth, that men are enforced to take away the plantes from theyr possession: these frutes are founde at all tymes of the yere. There is also an other kinde of wilde plant that groweth in the feedes, whiche I haue not seene but in the Ilande of Hispaniola, although they be founde in other Ilandes of the Indies: these they call *Tunas*. They growe of a Chille full of thornes, and byng sooth a ferre muche lyke unto great Fygges, whiche haue a cypure: lyke Apples, and are within

**Tunas.**





with in of a hygh colour, with grapnes and the rynde lyke vnto a  
 fygge: they are of good taste, and grow abundantly in the fieldes  
 in many places: They worke a strange effecte in suche as eat  
 them, for if a man eate two, or thre, or more, they cause his vyne  
 to bee of the very colour of blood, which thynge chaunced once to  
 my selfe. For on a tyme as I made water, and sawe the colour  
 of my vyne, I entred into a great suspition of my lyfe, being so  
 astonysed for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to  
 mee vpon some other cause, insomuche that surely my imagina-  
 tion myght haue done mee hurte, but that they which were with  
 mee vnd comfote mee immediatly, declaring the cause thereof,  
 as they knew by experience, being auncient inhabitours in those  
 regions. There groweth also an other plant, which the people  
 of the countrey call *Bibaos*: this putteth forth certayne straight  
 branches, and very brode leaues, which the Indians vse for dy-  
 uers purposes: For in some places they couer theyr houses with  
 the leaues thereof, couched and layde after the maner of chetche,  
 wherunto it serueth very well: Sometymes also when it ray-  
 neth, they cast these ouer theyr heades, to defende them from the  
 water. They make also certayne chesses, which they call *Hamas*,  
 weaued after a strange sorte, and intermyxt with the leaues  
 of this *Bibaos*. These chesses are wrought in such sorte, that al-  
 though it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to fall into the water,  
 yet are not suche thinges wet as are within them: they are made  
 of the branches of the sayde *Bibaos*, with the leaues weaued to-  
 geather therewith: In these they keepe salte, and other subtile  
 thinges. They vse them also for an other purpose, which is this:  
 that syndyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarce-  
 nesse of victayles, they dyg by the rootes of these plantes while  
 they are yet young, or eate the plant it selfe, in that parte where  
 it is most tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where  
 it is as tender and whyte as a reede or butrushe. And forasmuche  
 as wee are nowe come to the ende of this narration, it commeth  
 to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thynge, which  
 is not farte from my purpose: and this is, howe the Indians  
 doe stayne or dye cloath of bombage cocton, or any other thynge  
 whiche they intende to dye, of diuers colours, as blache, tawny,  
 greene, blew, yelowe, and redde, which they doe with the barkes,  
 C. l.

*Bibaos.**Hamas.**Dyeing of cot-  
ton.*

or



A strange  
thing.

of ryndes, and leaues of certayne trees, which they know by experience to be good for this practise: and by this arte they make colours in suche perfection and excellencie, that no better can be deuysed. But this seemeth a strange thynge, that they doe all this in one selfe same vessell: So that when they haue caused the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle togeather, they make in the same vessell without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many colours as them lysteth: Whiche thynge I suppose to come to passe, by the disposition of the colour which they haue first giuen to the thynge that they intende to dye or colour, whether it bee threed, webbe, or cloth, or any thing that they intende to colour.

Of venomous Apples, wherewith they  
poyson theyr arrowes.



The Apples wherewith the Indian Caniballes inuene theyr arrowes, growe on certayne trees couered with many branches and leaues, being very greene, and growing thicke. They are laden with abundance of these euyl frutes, and haue their leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they

are lesse and rounder: the fruit is much lyke the muscadel peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in soume and bygnesse, and are in some partes keyned with redde spottes; and of very sweet sauour: these trees for the most parte, growe euer by the sea coastes, and neere vnto the water, and are so sayde and of pleasant sauour, that there is no man that seeth them, but will desyre to eate thereof, insomuche that if it may bee spoken of any fruite yet growyng on the earth; I woulde say that this was the unhappy fruite wherof our first parentes Adam and Eue tasted, wherby they both lost theyr felicitie, and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these frutes, and of the great Antes whose biting causeth swelling, (wherof I haue spoken elsewhere) and of the Cutes, or Lylartes, and bypers, and such other venomous thynge, the Canibals which are the cheefe archers

Note.

Caniballes are  
chers.



archers among the Indians, are accustomed to poyson they<sup>wherewith they inuentione they arrows.</sup> arrows, wherewith they kyll all that they wounde: These be-  
 comes they mingle together, and make thereof a blacke masse  
 of composition, whiche appeareth lyke vnto very blacke pitch.  
 Of this poyson I caused a great quantitie to be burnt, in *Santa*  
*Maria Antiqua*, in a place two leagues and more within the  
 lande, with a great multitude of they<sup>wherewith they inuentione they arrows.</sup> inuentioned arrows and  
 other munition, with also the house wherein they were reserved:  
 This was in the yeere. 1514. at suche tyme as the army arri-  
 ued there with captayne *Pedriarias da villa*, at the commaunde-  
 ment of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to  
 the hystory. These Apples (as I haue sayde) growe neare vnto  
 the sea. And whereas the Chyistians whiche serue your maie-  
 stie in these partes, suppose that there is no remedy so profy-  
 table for such as are wounded with these arrows, as is the water  
 of the sea, if the wound be much washed therewith, by which mea-  
 nes some haue escaped, although but fewe: yet to say the trueth,  
 albeit the water of the sea haue a certaine caustike quality against  
 poyson, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case, nor yet to this  
 day haue the Chyistians perceyued that of sytite that haue been  
 wounded, thzee haue recovered. But that your maiestie may the  
 better consider the force of the venome of these trees, you shal fur-  
 ther vnderstand, that if a man doe but repose him selfe to sleepe a  
 litle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head & eyes  
 so swolne when he waketh, that the eye lyddes are toynd with the  
 cheekes, and if it chaunce one droppe or more of the deaw of the  
 sayde tree to fall into the eye, it utterly destroyeth the syght. The  
 pestilent nature of this tree is suche, that it can not be declared in  
 fewe wordes. Of these, there groweth great plentie in the gulfe  
 of *Fraba*, towarde the North coast, on the West and East syde.  
 The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so great a  
 smoke, that no man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so  
 great a payne in the head.

*Petrus Arias.*

The water of  
the sea.

The gulfe of  
*Diaba.*

Among other trees whiche are in these Indies, as well in  
 the Ilandes, as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde  
 whiche they call *Xagua*, whereof there is great plentie: they  
 are very hygh, and steepte, and saye to beholde. Of these  
 they vse to make pykes, and *lançys* of dyuers lengths and  
 byg.

*Et.ii.*

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



bygnesse: they are of a sayre colour, betwene russet and whyte: this tree byngeth souer a great fruit as bygge as Papauer or Popple, and muche lyke therunto, it is very good to bee eaten when it is ripe. Out of this they get a very cleare water, wherewith they washe their legges, and sometymes all theyr bodies, when they seele theyr fleshe weery, saynt, or loose: the which water, besyde that it hath a byndyng qualite, it hath also this property, that whatsoeuer it toucheth, it stayneth it blacke by litle and litle, vntyll it bee as blacke as gete, which colour can not bee taken away in lesse space then tenne or twelue dayes: And if the nayle bee but touched therewith, it is so stayned that it can by no meanes bee taken away, vntyll it eyther fall of, or grow out, and bee clipped away by litle & litle, as I my selfe haue ostentymes seene by experience.

*Hobi.*

Some thinke  
these to be mis-  
robales.

There is an other kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*: these are very great and sayre, and cause holefome ayre where they growe, and a pleasaunt shadowe, and are founde in great abundance: theyr fruit is very good, and of good tast and saour, and much lyke vnto certayne damsons or pynes being litle and yelow, but theyr stone is very great, by reason wherof they haue but litle meate: theyr barke or rinde boyled in water, maketh a holefome bathe for the legges, because it byndeth and stayeth the loosenesse of the fleshe, so sensibly that it is a marueyle to consider. It is surely a holefome and excellent bathe agaynst suche sayntnesse, and is the best tree that may be founde in those parties to sleepe vnder: For it causeth no heauinesse of the head, as doe byuers other trees, which thyng I speake, because the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fieldes. It is therefore a common practise among them, that wheresoeuer they fynde these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherein they sleepe.

*Date trees.*

There are also a kynde of bygh *Date trees*, and full of thornes: the woodde of these is most excellent, being very blacke, and thynnyng, and so heauye that no parte thereof can swymme aboue the water, but syneth immediatly to the boottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and darts, also Iawelyns, speares, and pykes: and I say pykes, because that in the coastes of the sea of *Sar*, beyonde *Esqueua* and

*Chinabie*  
sautes of the  
sea of *Sar*.





And *Tiacha*, the Indians use great and long pipes, made of the wood of these Date trees. Of the same likewise they make clubs, bows, and swoordes, and dyvers other weapons: Also vesselles and houlholde stuffe of dyvers sortes, very fayre and commodious. Furthermoze of this wood the Christians use to make dyvers muscalle instrumentes, as Claricymballes, Lutes, Sioterns, and suche other, the which besyde theyr fayre sbyppng colour lyke unto gete, are also of a good sounde, and very durable, by reason of the hardnesse of the wood.

After that I have sayde thus much of trees and plants, I have thought good also to speake somewhat of hearbes. You shal therefore vnderstand, that in these Indies there is an hearbe much like vnto a yelow Lillie, about whose leaues there growe and creepe certayne cordes or lases, as the lyke is partly seene in the hearbe which we call lased sauery, but these of the Indies are much bigger, and longer, and so strong that they tye theyr hangyng beds thereby, whiche they call *Hamsacas*, where of we haue spoken elsewhere: these cordes they call *Cabnia*, and *Henequen*, whiche are all one thyng, sayyng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a syner substance, as it were linc, and the other is grosser, lyke the weeke or twyst of hempe, and is imperfect in comparison to the other: they are of colour betweene whyte and yelow, lyke vnto abarne, and some also whyte. Which *Henequen*, whiche is the most subryle and syner threed, the Indians sawe in sunder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iron, in this maner: They moue the threed of *Henequen* vppon the Iron which they intende to sawe or cutte, drawyng the one hande after the other as doe they that sawe, puttyng euer now and then a portion of syner sande vppon the threed, or on the place or parte of the Iron, where they continue rubbyng the sayde threed, so that if the threed be wozne, they take an other, and continue in theyr worke as before, vntyll they haue cutte in sunder the Iron, although it be neuer so bygge, and cut it as if it were a tender thyng, and easy to be sawne.

And soasmuche as the leaues of trees may bee counted among hearbes, I will heere speake somewhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certayne trees whiche are founde in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plant that seemeth moze wyde and desoyled: so that

An hearbe that  
beareth cordes.

*Cabnia* and  
*Henequen*.

A strange  
thyng.

Leaues.

Cr.iii.

I can

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

421



I can not well determine whether they be trees, or plants: they haue certayne branches full of large and deformed leaues, which branches were first leaues lyke vnto the other. As the branches made of these leaues grow forth in length, there commeth other leaues of them: so that in fine it is a difficult thing to describe the forme of these trees, except the same should be done by a picture, wherby the eye might conceiue that wherem the tongue sayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of suche vertue, that being well beaten and layed vpon a cloth, after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many peeces, it healeth it in syxtiene dayes, & maketh it as whole as though it had neuer been broken: During the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the fleshe, that it can not without much difficultie be taken away, but as soone as it hath healed the soze, and wrought his operation, it looeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe, and dyuers other which haue proued it, know by experience.

A leafe of great  
vertue.

Of fishes, and of the maner  
of fyshyng.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers & sundry kyndes of fishes, muche differing in shape & forme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet will I make mention of some, And first to begin at Sardines, you shall vnderstand that there is found a kinde of this fishes very large and with red captes, being a very delicate fysh. The best kyndes of other fishes are these, *Moxarre*, *Diabase*, *Brettes*, *Dabaos*, *Chornebackes*, & *Salmons*: All these, and dyuers other which I doe not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in ryuers. There are like wise taken very good *Creyppes*. There are also found in the sea, certayne other fishes, as *Soles*, *Packetels*, *Turbus*, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Cbieppe*, *Xaibas*, *Locustes*, *Oysters*, exceeding great *Toptoples*, & *Tiburoni* of marueilous bygnesse: also *Manates*, and *Murene*, and many other fishes, which haue no names in our language, and these of suche diuersitie and quantitie, as can not

*Tiburons.*  
*Manates.*

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



not be expressed without large writing and long time. But to let passe to increate particularly of the multitude of fishes, I intende to speake chiefly, and somewhat largely, of thre sortes of most notable fishes: whereof the first is, the great *Coctoples*, the seconde is called *Tiburon*, and the thyrd *Manatt*. And to begin at the first, I say that in the *Islands* of *Cuba*, are found great *Coctoples* (which are certayne shell fishes) of such byggennesse that Great Coctop-  
les. herme of syrene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them out of the water, as I haue been informed of credible persons dwelling in the same *Island*. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie, that in the syrne lande, in the village of *Acla*, there are of this sort some taken and kylled of such byggennesse, that syre men with muche difficultie coulde scarcely drawe them out of the water, and commonly the least sort of them are as much as two men may carry at a burden: that whiche I sawe lyfted by syre men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth moze then syre yardes. The maner of taking them, is this: At sometymes chaunceth that in theyr great nettes (whiche they call *hoote nettes*) there are founde certayne *Coctoples* of the common sort, in great quantites, and when they come out of the sea, and byng soorth theyr egges, and goe together by companyes from the sea, to feede on the lande, the *Christians* or *Indians* folowe theyr *steppes* which they fynde in the lande, and soone ouertake them, because they are very heauy and slowe in goyng, although they make all the hast they can to returne to the sea, alioone as they espie any bodie. When they that pursue them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or staffe vnder theyr legges, and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet running, so that they can goe no further, nor yet ryle agayne or turne, and thus they suffer them to lye still vntill they folowe after the rest, which they ouerturne in lyke maner: and by this meanes take very many, at such tyme as they come soorth of the sea as I haue sayde: This fysh is very excellent and holysome to be eaten, and of good tast. The seconde of the thre fishes wherof I haue spoken, is the *Tiburon*: this is a very great Tiburons. fysh, and very quicke and swyft in the water, and a cruell deuourer: these are oftentimes taken, as well when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at

Ce.iii.

any

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



any other tyme, and especially the leaste kynde of these fishes. When the shypes are under sayle, the byggest soze are taken after this maner. When the *Tiburones* seech the shyppe saylyng, be foloweth it swymmyng behynde, the whiche thinges the mariners seeyng, call soozth all the fylch of the shyppe into the sea for the fysh to eat, who neuerthelesse foloweth them with equall pace, although they make neuer suche haste wiche full wynde and sayles, and waloweth on euery syde and about the shyp, and thus foloweth it sometyme for the space of a hundred & fyftie leagues, and moze, and when the mariners are disposed to take them, they cast downe by the sterne of the shyppe a hooke of Iron, as bygge as the byggest synger of a mans hande, of thzee spannes in length, and crooked lyke a fyshooke, with beardes acco- dyng to the bygnesse thereof, and fastened to an Iron cheyne of fyue or fyve lynkes neare vnto the ende, and from thence tyed with a great rope, fastnyng also on the hooke for a bayte, a peece of some fysh, or hogges fleshe, or some other flesh, or the bowels and intralles of an other *Tiburone* which they haue taken before, whiche may easily be done, for I haue seene niene taken in one day, and if they would haue taken moze, they myght also. Thus when the *Tiburone* hath pleasauntly folowed the shyppe a long vsage, at the length he swaloweth the bayte with the hooke, and as well by his stryuyng to flee or escape, as also by the swyft passage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwartagh and catcheth hode of his chappes: the whiche fysh when it is taken, it is of such huge byggenesse, that twelue or fyftene men are scarcely able to drawe it out of the water, and lyst it into the shyppe, where one of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the head with a club or beetle, vntyll hee haue slayne it: they are sometymes founde of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, sixe, or seuen spannes in breadth, where they are broadest: they haue very great and wyde mouthes, to the ppropoztion of the rest of theyr bodies, and haue two rowes of teeth, the one somewhat separate from the other, of cruell shape, and standyng very thicke. When they haue slayne this fysh, they cut the body thereof in small peeces, and put it to dype, hangyng it thzee or foure dayes at the cordes of the sayle clothes to dype in the wynde, and then eat it: It is doubtesse a good fysh, and of great commoditie to serue the





the Shypes for vitalles for many dayes : the leaste of these  
 fishes are most hollesome and tender, it hath a skynne muche  
 lyke to the skynne of a Sole wherunto the sayd *Tiburon* is like  
 in shape : Whiche I saye, because *Plinie* hath made mention  
 of none of these three fishes, among the number of them wher  
 of he writeth in his natural hystorie . These *Tiburons* come  
 forth of the sea, and enter into the ryuers, where they are no  
 lesse perplous then great *Lisartes* or *Crocodiles*, wherof I haue  
 spoken largely before : For they deuoure men, hynne, and hoxen,  
 euen as do the *Crocodiles* : they are very daungerous in cer  
 tayne washyng places or pooles by the ryuers sydes, and where  
 they haue deuoured at other tymes . Dyuers other fishes both  
 great and small, of sundry sortes and kyndes, are accustomed  
 to folowe the Shypes goyng vnder sayle, of the whiche I will  
 speake somewhat when I haue written of *Manate*, whiche is the  
 shype of the three wherof I haue promised to entreate . *Manate*  
 therefore, is a fysh of the sea, of the byggest sorte, and muche  
 greater then the *Tiburon* in length and breadyth, and is very  
 bruytyshe and vyle, so that it appeareth in fourine lyke vnto  
 one of those great vesselles made of goates skynnes, wherin they  
 vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo*, or in *Arcualo* : the  
 head of this beast is lyke the head of an Oxe, with also like eyes,  
 and hath in the place of arnes, two great stumpe wherwith he  
 swymmeth : It is a very gentle and tame beast, and commeth of  
 tentimes out of the water to the next shore, where if he fynd any  
 hearbes or grasse, he feedeth therof . Our men are accustomed to  
 kyll many of these, and diuers other good fishes, with their crof  
 bowes, pursuing them in barkes or *Canoas*, because they swim  
 in maner aboute the water : the which thyng when they see, they  
 drawe them with a hooke tyde at a small corde, but somewhat  
 strong : As the fysh fleeth away, the archer letteth go, and pro  
 longeth the corde by litle and litle, vntyll he haue let it go many  
 fathams : at the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke, or a  
 peece of lycht woodde, and when the fysh is gone a litle way,  
 and hath coloured the water with his blood, and seeleth hym  
 selfe to faput and drawe towarde the ende of his lyfe, he refoz  
 teth to the shore, and the archer foloweth, geatheryng by his  
 corde, wherof whyle there yet remaine fyfe or eysht fathams, or  
 some

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



sometwhat more or lesse, he draweth it towarde the lande, and draweth the fysh therewith by litle and litle, as the waues of the sea helpe hym to do it the more eaily: then, with the helpe of the rest of his companie, he lysteth this great beaste out of the water to the lande, beyng of suche byggenesse, that to carrye it from thence to the cite, it shalbe requisite to haue a cart with a good yoke of Oxen, and sometymes more, accordyng as these fyshes are of byggenesse, some being much greater then other some in the same kinde, as is seene of other beastes: Sometymes they lyst these fyshes into the Canoa or barke, without drawyng them to the lande as before, for as soone as they are slayne, they float aboute the water: And I beleue verily that this fysh is one of the best in the worlde to the east, and the lykeliest vnto fleshe, especially so lyke vnto beefe, that who so hath not seene it whole, can iudge it to be none other when he seeth it in peeces then very beefe or veale, and is certaynly so lyke vnto fleshe, that all the men in the worlde may herein be deceyued: the east likewise, is like vnto the east of very good veale, and lastly long, yf it be powdred: so that in fine, the Vale of these parts, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This *Manate* hath a certayne stone, or rather bone in his head within the brayne, whiche is of qualitie greatly appropiate agaynst the disease of the stone, if it be burnt and grounde into small powder, and taken fastyng in the morning when the paine is felte, in such quantitie as may lye vppon a penny, with a draught of good whyte wyne: For being thus taken thre or foure mornings, it acquieteth the greefe, as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue proued it true, and I myselfe by testimonie of syght, do wytnesse that I haue seene this stone sought of dyuers for this effecte.

There are also dyuers other fyshes as bygge as this *Manate*, among the whiche there is one called *Vibuella*. This fysh beareth in the toppe of his head a swoorde, beyng on every syde full of many sharpe teeth, this swoorde is naturally very harde and strong, of foure or fyue spannes in length, and of propozition accordyng to the same byggenesse: and for this cause is this fysh called *Spada*, that is, the swoorde fysh. Of this kynde some are founde as litle as *Sardines*, and other so great, that two yokes of Oxen are scarcely able to drawe them

The fysh  
*Manate*.

A remedy  
against the  
stone.

The swoorde  
fish.



them on a Cart. But whereas befoze I haue promised to speake of other fshes, whiche are taken in these seas whyle the shypes are vnder sayle, I wyl not forgeat to sprake of the Tunnye, whiche is a great and good fsh, and is ofentymes taken and kybde with trout speares, and hookes, cast in the water, when they play and swym about the shypes. In lyke maner also are taken many Turbutts, whiche are very good fshes as are lpyghtly in all the sea. And here is to be noted, that in the great Ocean sea, there is a strange thying to be consydered, whiche all that haue been in the Indies affirme to be true: And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are some prouinces fertile and frui:full, and some barren, euen so doth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at some wyndes the shypes sayle fytie, or a hundred, or two hundred leagues and moze, without takyng or sleepng of one fsh: and agayne, in the selfe same Ocean in some places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouyng of the fshes, where they are taken abundantly. It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake somewhat of the sleepng of fshes, whiche is doubtlesse a strange thying to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shypes sayle by the great Ocean, folowng theyr viage, there ryseth sometymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certayne litle fshes, of the whiche the byggest is no greater then a Sardyne, and so dimynishe lesse and lesse from that quantitie, that some of them are very litle: these are called *Volatori*, that is, sleepng fshes: they ryse by great companies and flockes, in suche multitudes that it is an astonishment to beholde them: Sometimes they ryse but litle from the water, & (as it chaunceth) continue one flyght for the space of an hundred paces, and sometymes moze, or lesse, befoze they fall agayne into the sea, sometymes also they fall into the shypes. And I remember, that on an euenyng when al the company in the shyp were on theyr knees, syngyng *Sa'ue regina* in the hyghest part of the Castell of the poupe, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these sleepng fshes, and came so neare vs, that many of them fell into the shyppe, among the whiche, two or thye fel hard by me, whiche I tooke alyue in my hand, so that I myght well perceyue that they were as bygge as Sardines, and of the same quantitie,

Tunnye.

Turbut.

Note.

Sleepng fshes.



quantitie, hauing two wynges or quilles growing out of theyr  
 synnes, lyke vnto those wherewith all fyshes swim in ryuers:  
 these wynges are as long as the fyshes them selues. As long  
 as they wynges are moyst, they beate them vp in the ayre,  
 but assoone as they are drye, they can contynue theyr flyghe  
 no further then as I haue sayde before, but fall immediatlye  
 into the sea, and so ryse agayne, and flee as before from place  
 to place. In the yeere a thousand, fyue hundred, and fyftee,ne,  
 when I came fyrst to enfourme your Maiestie of the state of the  
 thynges in India, and was the yeere folowynge in Flaun-  
 ders in the tynie of your most fortunate successe in these your  
 kyngdomes of Aragonie and Castyle, whereas at that tyme  
 I sayled about the Ilande *Bermuda*, otherwyle called *Garza*,  
 beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at this  
 daye in the worlde, and arryuyng there at the deapth of cyght  
 yardes of water, and distaunt from the lande as farre as the  
 shotte of a peece of Ordnance, I determyned to sende some of  
 the shyp to lande, aswell to make searche of suche thynges as  
 were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne Hogges for en-  
 crease. But the tyme not seruing my purpose by reason of con-  
 trary wynde, I coulde byng my shyppes no nearer the Ilande,  
 beyng twelue leagues in length, and syxe in breadth, and about  
 thyrtye in circuite, lying in the thre and thyrtyeth degree of the  
 North syde. Whyle I remayned heere, I saw a stryfe and com-  
 bat betwecne these fleeing fyshes, and the fyshes named Gylt  
 heades, & the foules called Seamewes, and Cozmozantes, which  
 surely scemed vnto me a thyng of as great pleasure and solace as  
 coulde be deuised, while the Gylt heades swam on the bymme  
 of the water, and sometymes lysted theyr shoulers about the  
 same, to raple the sleepeing fyshes out of the water to dryue them  
 to flyght, and folowe them swimmyng to the place where  
 they fal, to take and eate them sodenly. Againe on the other side,  
 the Seamewes and Cozmozantes, take many of these flee-  
 yng fyshes, so that by this meanes they are neyther safe in the  
 ayre, nor in the water. In the selfe same peryll and danger doo  
 men lyue in this moxtall lyfe, wherein is no certayne securitie,  
 neyther in hyghe estate, nor in lowe. Which thyng surely ought  
 to put vs in remembzaunce of that blessed and safe resting  
 place

The Iland of  
 Bermuda.

Not to die for  
 the Dyce, nor to  
 lowe for the  
 Crowe.





place whiche God hath prepared for suche as loue hym, who shall acquiete and synithe the trauailes of this troublous worlde, wherein are so many dangers, and bying them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securitie and rest. But to returne to the hy storye: these byrdes and foules whiche I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda*, neere vnto the whiche I sawe these slepyng sythes: for they coulde be of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre from the coastes where they are bredde.

Of thincrase and decrease (that is) rysyng  
and fallyng of our Ocean sea, and  
South sea, called the sea of *Sur*.



I will nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Prouince, or at the least in the citie of golden Castyle, otherwyse called *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea, & of the South sea, called the sea of *Sur*, not omitting to note one synguler and marueplous thyng whiche I haue considered of the Ocean sea, wherof hitherto no Cosmographer, Pilot, or Haryner, or any other, haue satisfed me. I say therefore, as it is well knownen to your maiestie, and all such as haue knowledge of the Ocean sea, that this great Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouth of the straghte of *Gibilterra*, in the which the water, from the north & furthest part of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the sayde straghte, epyther in the East toward the coaste commonly called *Leuante*, or in any other part of the sayde sea *Mediterraneum*, the sea doth not so fall nor increase, as reason woulde iudge for so great a sea, but increaseth very litle, and a small space: Nevertheless, with out the mouth of the straghte in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and falleth very muche, and a great space of grounde, from syre houres to syre houres, as in all the coastes of *Spainne*, *Bytanie*, *Flaunders*, *Germanie*, and *England*. The selfe same Ocean sea in the firme lande newly founde, in the coastes of the same lying toward the North, doth nether rylse nor fall, nor lykewyse in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and all the other

The west  
Ocean.  
The sea *Mediterraneum*.

*Hispaniola*  
*Cuba*

Libra. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



cher Ilandes of the same lying towarde the north, for the space of thre thousande leagues, but onely in lyke maner as dooth the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italy, which is in maner nothyng, in respecte to that increase and decrease whiche the sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same Ocean in the coastes of the sayde spynne lande lying towarde the South, in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coast of that lande whiche lyeth towarde the East and West from that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margaritea*, whiche the Indians call *Tarracqui*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and in all other Ilandes of the south sea of *Sur*, the water ryleth and falleth so muche, that when it falleth, it goeth in maner out of syght, whiche thyng I my selfe haue seene oftentymes. And here your maiestie may note an other thing, that from the north sea to the south sea, being of such difference the one from the other in ryling and falling, yet is the lande that deuideth them not past eyghtene or twentie leagues in breadth from coaste to coaste: So that both the sayde seas, beyng all one Ocean, this strange effecte is a thyng worthy greatly to be considered of all suche as haue inclination and desyre to knowe the secreete woorkes of nature, wherein the infinite power and wysedome of God is seene to be suche, as may allure al good natures to reuerence and loue so diuine a maiestie. And wheras by þ demonstrations of learned men I am not satisfied of the naturall cause hereof, I content my selfe to knowe and beleue, that he whiche hath made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other, whiche he hath not graunted to the reason of man to comprehend, muche lesse to so base a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderstandyng, shall search the cause hereof for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the matter in question, as a wytnesse that haue seene the experience of the thyng,

Of

The South  
sea.

The power  
and wysedome  
of God is seene  
in his crea-  
tures.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the straight or narrow passage of the land lying betweene the North and South sea, by the which spyces may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of *Molucca* into Spaine by the VVest Ocean, then by that way whereby the Portugales sayle into the East India.



**I**t hath been an opinion among the Cosmographers and Pilottes of late tyme, and other whiche haue had practyse in thynghes touchyng the sea, that there shoulde be a straight of water passing from the North sea of the tyme, into the South sea of *Sur*, which neuer thelesse hath not been seene nor founde to this day. And surely yf there be any such straight, we that inhabite those partes do thynke the same shoulde be rather of land then of water. For the tyme land in some partes thereof is so straight and narrowe, that the Indians say that from the mountaynes of the prouince of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca* (whiche are betweene the one sea and the other) if a man ascend to the top of the mountaines, and looke toward the North, he may see the water of the North sea of the prouince of *Beragua*: & againe looking the contrary way, may on the other syde (towards the South) see the sea of *Sur*, and the prouinces which confine with it, as do the territories of the two Lordes or kynges of the sayde prouinces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleue, that yf it be as the Indians say, of all that is hitherto knowen, this is the narrowest straight of the tyme land, whiche some affirme to be full of rough mountaynes. Yet do I take it for a better way, or soo short as is that whiche is made from the port called *Nomen Dei* (whiche is in the North sea) vnto the newe cite of *Panama*, being in the coast and on the bancke of the sea of *Sur*, whiche way is lykewyse very rough, full of thicke wooddes, mountaynes, rpuers, valleyes, and very difficulte to passe through, and can not be done without great labour & trauaile. Some measure this way in this part, to be from sea to sea eighteene leagues, whiche I suppose to be rather twentie, not for that it is any more by measure, but because it is rough and difficult, as I haue sayde,

*Esquegua and Vrraca.*

*Nomen Dei. Panama.*



sayde, and as I haue founde it by experience, hauing nowe thusse  
 passed that way by foote, counting from the port and hillage of  
*Nomen Dei*, unto the dominion of the Cacique of *Inanaga*, other  
 wyle called *Capira*, eyght leagues, and from thence to the ryuer  
 of *Chagre*, other eyght leagues. So that at this riuer, being six-  
 tene leagues from the sayde port, endeth the roughnesse of the  
 way: then from hence to the marueilous bypdge are two leagues,  
 and beyonde that, other two, unto the port of *Panama*: So that  
 altogether, in my iudgement, make twentie leagues. And yf  
 therfore this nauigation may be founde in the South sea for the  
 trade of spyces (as we trust in God) to be brought from thence  
 to the sayde port of *Panama* (as ts possible enough) they maye  
 afterwarde easely passe to the North sea, notwithstanding the  
 difficultie of the way of the twentie leagues aforesayde. Which  
 thyng I affirme, as a man wel trauapled in these regions, ha-  
 uing twyle on my feete passed ouer this straght in the yeere  
 1521, as I haue said. It is furthermore to be understood, that it  
 is a marueilous facilitie to byng spyces by this way which I wil  
 now declare. From *Panama* to the ryuer of *Chagre*, are foure  
 leagues of good and sayre way, by the which cartes may passe at  
 pleasure, by reason that the mountains are but few and litle, and  
 that the greatest part of these foure leagues is a playne greunde  
 boyde of trees: and when the cartes are come to the sayde ryuer,  
 the spyces may be caried in Barkes and pympelles. For this  
 riuer entreth into the North sea spue or syxe leagues lower then  
 the port of *Nomen Dei*, and emptieth it selfe in the sea neere unto  
 an Island called *Bastimento*, where is a verpe good and safe port.  
 Your maiestie may now therfore consyder, howe great a thyng,  
 and what commoditie it may be to conuey spyces this way, so far-  
 much as y<sup>e</sup> riuer of *Chagre*, hauing his originall only two leagues  
 from the South sea, continueth his course, and emptieth it selfe  
 into the other North sea. This riuer runneth salt, and is verpe  
 great, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought  
 or desired: the marueilous bypdge made by the worke of nature,  
 being two leagues beyond the sayde ryuer, & other two leagues  
 on this syde the port of *Panama*, so lying in the mydde waye be-  
 twene them both, as framed naturally in suche sort, that none  
 which passe by this viage doch see any such bypdge, or thinke that  
 there

The ryuer of  
Chagre.

The Ilande  
Bastimento.

The maruei-  
lous bypdge.





there is any such buydoyng in that place, vntill they be in the top  
 thereof, in the way toward *Panama* : But as soone as they are  
 on the bydge, looking towarde the ryght hande, they see a litle  
 ryuer vnder them, whiche hath his chanel distant from the feete  
 of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or  
 more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passyng the  
 depth of a mans legge to the knee, and is in breadth betweene  
 thyrtye and fourtie paces, and falleth into the ryuer of *Chagre*. To-  
 ward the ryght hand, standyng on this bydge, there is nothing  
 seene but great trees. The largenesse of the bydge conteyneth  
 fiftene paces, and the length thereof about threescore or foure-  
 score paces : The arche is so made of most harde stone, that no  
 man can beholde it without admiracion, beyng made by the bygh  
 and omnipotent creatour of all thinges. But to returne to speake  
 somewhat moze of the conueying of spices, I say, that when it  
 shall please almyghtie God that this nauigation aforesayde shall  
 be founde by the good fortune of your maiestie, and that the spy-  
 ces of the *Ilandes* of the South sea (whiche may also be other-  
 wyse called the Ocean of the East India, in the which are the *I-*  
*landes* of *Molucca*) shalbe brought to the sayd coast and the port  
 of *Panama*, and be conueyed from thence (as we haue sayde) by  
 the byrnie lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from  
 thence into this our other sea of the North, from whence they  
 may afterwarde be brought into *Spainne*, I say that by this mea-  
 nes the viage shalbe shortned moze then seuen thousand leagues,  
 with muche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vsed by the  
 way of *Commendator* of *Aysa*, captayne vnder your maiestie,  
 who this present yeere attempted a viage to the place of the sayd  
 spices : and not only the way is thus muche shortned, but also a  
 thyrd parte of the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therefore, if a-  
 ny had hitherto attempted this viage by the sea of *Sur*, to seeke  
 the *Ilandes* of spices, I am of firme opinion, that they shoulde  
 haue been founde long since, as doubtlesse they may bee by the  
 reasons of *Cosmographie*.

The *Ilandes*  
 of *Molucca*.

The commodi-  
 tie of this  
 viage.

Howe

Howe

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.

433



Howe things that are of one kynde, dyffer in fourme  
and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place  
where they are engendred or grow, and of the  
beastes called Tygers.

Tigers.



In the firme lande are founde many terrible  
beastes, which some thinke to bee Tygers.  
Whiche thing neuerthelesse I dare not af-  
firme, considering what aucthours do wyte  
of the lychtnesse and agilite of the Tyger,  
wheras this beast, being otherwyle in shape  
very like vnto a Tiger, is notwithstanding  
very slowe. Yet true it is, that according to the marueilles of the  
worlde, and differences which naturall thinges haue in dyuers  
regions vnder heauen, and dyuers constellations of the same,  
under the which they are created, we see that some suche plantes  
and hearbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmlesse and  
holosome in other regions. And hyrdes which in one prouince  
are of good taste, are in other so vnlauery that they may not bee  
eaten. Men lykewyle which in some countreys are blacke, are  
in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men.  
Euen so may it bee, that Tygers are lycht in some region, as  
they wyte, and may neuerthelesse be slow and heauy in these In-  
dies of your maiestie, wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arable  
draue their taples long and bigge on the ground, and the Bulles  
of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towarde theyr heades: yet  
are those sheepe, and these bulles. Men in some countreys are  
hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and  
hutythe. All these thinges, and many moze, which may bee  
sayde to this purpose, are easie to bee proued, and woorthy to bee  
belceued, of suche as haue read of the lyke in aucthours, or tra-  
ueyled the worlde, whereby theyr owne sight may teache them  
the experience of these thinges wherof I speake. It is also ma-  
nifest that *Iucca*, wherof they make theyr bread in the *Islande* of  
*Hispaniola*, is deadly popson if it bee eaten greene wylch the iuile:  
and yet hath it no such propertie in the firme lande, where I haue  
eaten it many tymes, and found it to be a good fruit. The *Bats* of  
*Spaine*, although they bite, yet are they not venomous; but in the  
firme

Plantes and  
hearbes.

Birdes.

Men.

Sheepe,  
Bulles.

*Iucca*,

*Battes*,



firme land, many vye that are bytten of them. And in this foynne may so many thinges be sayd, that yrite shall not suffice to wyte, whereas my intent is only to prooue that this beast may be a Tyger, or of þ kynd of Tygers, although it be not of such lightnesse and swiftnesse as are they wherof Plinie & other aucthours Plinie. speake, dyscrybyng it to bee one of the swyftest beastes of the lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swyft course thereof was called by that name. The fyrst Spanyardes whiche sawe this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of these was that whiche *Don Diego Columbo* the Admirall sent your maiestic out of newe Spayne to *Toledo*. Theyr heades are hke to the heades of Lions, or Lionesses, but greater: the rest of all theyr bodyes, and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes one nere vnto an other, and diuided with a circumference or fryndge of redde colour, shewyng as it were a sayre woozke and correspondent picture, about their croopes or hynder partes, they haue these spottes byggest, and lesse and lesse towarde theyr bellies, legges, and heades. That whiche was brought to *Toledo*, was young, and but litle, and by my estimation of the age of thre peeres: but in the firme lande there are many founde of greater quantitie, for I haue seene some of thre spans in height, and moze then fve in length. They are beastes of great force, with strong legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges, which wee call dogge teeth: they are so fierce, that in my iudgement no reall Lion of the byggest sort is so strong or fierce. Of these, there are many found in the firme lande, whiche deuour many of the Indians, & doe much hurt oetherwyle: but since the coming of the Christians, many haue been kylde with Crossebowes after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowledge of the haunt of any of these Tigers, he goeth searching their trafe, with The hunting  
of Tigers. his crossebow & with a litle hound or begle, and not with a gryp-hounde, because this beast would soone kyll any dog that would venter on him: When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he runneth about him bayng continually, and approacheth so neare him, snapping and grynyng, with so quicke sleepe and re- turning, that he beereby so molested this fierce beast, that hee driuech him to take the next tree, at the foote wherof he remaineth.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Apill bayting, and the Tyger gryuuyng and shewing his teethe,  
 whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or  
 xiiii. pases of, stryketh him with the querrell of his crossebowe in  
 the best, and sleeth incontinent, leaupng the Tyger in his tra-  
 uayle for lyfe and death, bytynge the tree and eatyng earth for  
 fiercenesse: then within the space of two or thye houre, or the  
 day folowynge, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge  
 fyndeth the place where he lyeth dead. In the yeere. 1522. I  
 with the other rulers and magistrates of the citie of *Santa Ma-  
 ria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, tooke order in our counsaile, a rewarde  
 of foure or fyue peeces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that  
 kyled any of these Tygers: by reason whereof many were kild  
 in thoyte space, both with crossebowes, and also with dyuers  
 snares and ingens. But to conclude, I will not obstinately stand  
 in opynion whether these beastes be Tygers or Panthers, or of  
 the number of any other suche beastes of spotted heare, or also  
 peraduenture some other newe beast vnknewen to the olde wy-  
 ters, as were many other whereof I haue spoken in this booke:  
 Of whiche thyng I doe not greatly marueyle, forasmuche as  
 vnto our tyme this great part of the worlde was vnknewen to  
 the antiquitie, insomuche that none of the wyters of that age,  
 nor yet Ptolome in his Cosmographie, or any other since him,  
 haue made any mention hereof, vntyll the first Admyrall *Don  
 Christopher Colonus* discovered the same: A thing doubtesse with-  
 out comparyson muche greater then that which is layde of Her-  
 cules, that he first gaue the entrance of the sea *Mediterraneum*  
 into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doe before  
 him. And hereof ryseth the fable that the mountaynes of *Cal-  
 pe* and *Abila* (whiche are directly one agaynst an other in the  
 strayght of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in Spayne, and the other in  
 Affryke) were ioynded togeather before they were opened by  
 Hercules, who erected those his pillers which your maiestie giue  
 in token of prehemynance and lyke enterpyles, with likewise  
 these his wordes *Plus Ultra*, wordes doubtesse woorthy for  
 so great and vniuersall an Emperour, and not conuenient for  
 any other Prince: forasmuche as your holy Catholyke ma-  
 iestie haue spredde them in so strange and remote regions, so  
 many thousand leagues further then euer vnto Hercules. And cer-  
 tynly

A rewarde for  
 kylling of Ty-  
 gers.

Colonus com-  
 pared to Her-  
 cules.

The pillers of  
 Hercules.  
 The strayghtes  
 of Gibilterra.

Note.

*Plus Ultra*.  
 Howe farre the  
 Emperours  
 maiestie exten-  
 deth Hercules.





trynd syz, if there had been an Image of godd made in the yndies  
and fame of *Colonus*, he had as well deserued it, as any of those  
men to whom for theyr noble enterpryse the antiquitie gaue di-  
uine honour, if he had been in theyr tyme . But to returne to the  
matter whereof I began to speake : I neede say no moze of the  
fourme of this beast, sozasmuch as your Maicstie haue seene that  
whiche is yet alpye in *Toledo*. And surely the keeper of your ma-  
iesties Lions, who hath taken bypon him the charge to tame  
this beast, myght better haue bestowed his paynes in an other  
thing that myght haue been moze profitable for the safegarde of  
his lyfe, because this Tyger beyng yet but young, will dayly be  
stronger and fiercer, and increase in malyce . The Indians (and  
especially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Ca-  
tholyke Kyng *Don Ferdinando* commaunded to be called golden  
Castyle) call this beast *Ochi*. This thing is strange that chaunced  
of late : that whereas the Tiger whereof we haue made menti-  
on befoze, would haue kylde his keeper that then kept him in a  
cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame, that he ledde her ty-  
ed only with a small corde, and playde with her so familyarly, that  
I marueyled greatly to see it, yet not without certayne beleefe  
that this friendship will not last long, without danger of life to the  
keeper, sozasmuche as surely these beastes are not meete to bee  
among men, for theyr fiercenesse and cruell nature that can not  
be tamed.

A Tyger made  
tame.

Of the maners and customes of the Indians of  
the firme lande, and o' their women.



The maners & customes of these Indians,  
are dyuers in diuers prouinces . Some of  
them take as many wiues as them list, and  
oether lyue with one wyfe, whom they for-  
sake not without consent of both parties,  
whiche chaunceth especially when they haue  
no chyldren . The nobilitie of well men as

women, repute it infamous to loyne with any of base partridge o'  
strangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men, by  
reason of their valiantnesse, although they put a difference be-  
tweene the common fox & the other to whom they shewe obedi-  
ence, counceing it for a great matter & an honorable thing, if they

The Indian  
women.

Fl.iii.

bee

Eden. The decades.  
Bangorft Library.



bee beloued of any of them: insomuche that if they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe their sayth to him, so that bee bee not long absent farre from them, for they intent is not to be widowes, or to liue chaste lyke religious women. Many of them haue this custome, that when they perceyue that they are with chyldre, they take an hearbe wherwith they destroy that is conceiued: for they say that only well aged women should beare chyldren, and that they wil not forbear their pleasures, and desourne their bodies with bearyng of chyldren, whereby they teates become loose & hanging, which thing they greatly dispraise. When they are deliuered of theyr chyldren, they goe to the ryuer & washe them, whiche done, theyr blood and purgation ceaseth immediately: And when after this they haue a fewe dayes absteyned from the company of men, they become so strayght, as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite: They also whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as virgins. In some partes they weare certayne litle apernes rounde about them befoze and behynde, as low as to theyr knees and hammes, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all their bodie besyde. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a hollow pype of go'de, but the common sorte haue them inclosed in the shelles of certayne great welkes, and are besyde vicerly naked: For they thinke it no moze shame to haue theyr coddcs seene, then any other parte of theyr bodies: and in many prouinces both the men and women go vicerly naked, without any such couerture at all. In the prouince of *Cuena* they call a man *Chny*, and a woman *Ira*, whiche name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of ours. These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique* hath the lue of his most strong Indians appointed to beare him, when he remoueth to any place, or goeth abrode for his pleasure. Two of them cary him sitting vppon a long peece of wood, which is naturally as lycht as they can fynde, the other tenne solow next vnto him as footmen: they keepe continually a trottyng pace with him on their shoulders. When the two that cary him are weery, ether two come in their places, without any disturbance or stay. And thus

The men of  
India.

The kyng is  
borne on mens  
backes.



thus if the way bee playne, they cary him in this maner for the space of .xv. or .xv. leagues in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the most parte slaves, or *Naboriti*, that is, suche as are bounde to continuall seruice. I haue also noted that when the Indians perceyue them selues to be troubled with to muche blood, they let them selues blood in the calves of theyr legges, and byawnes of theyr armes: this doe they with a very sharpe stone, and sometymes with the final tooth of a *Uiper*, or with a sharpe reede or thorne. All the Indians are commonly without beardes, in somuch that it is in maner a matuelle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces, or other partes of theyr bodies: Albeit I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa*, who had heare on his face and other partes of his bodie, as had also his wyfe in such places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour, which neuer fadeth, and is much lyke vnto that wherewith the *Bozes* paynt them selues in *Barbarie* in token of nobilitie. But the *Bozes* are paynted specially on their visage and throte, and certayne other partes. Lykwylse the principall Indians vse these payntynge on theyr armes and byelles, but not on theyr visages, because among them the slaves are so marked. When the Indians of certayne prouinces goe to the battayle (especially the *Caniball* archers) they cary certayne shelles of great welkes of the sea, which they blow, and make therewith great sound, much lyke the noyse of *hoynes*: they cary also certayne *Tymbrels*, which they vse in the stead of *Drummes*: also very sayre plumes of feathers, and certayne armure of golde, especially great and rounde peeces on theyr byelles, and splintes on their armes. Lykwylse other peeces, which they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodies: For they esteeme nothyng so muche as to appeare galant in the warres, and to goe in most comely order that they can deuise, gylsterpyng with precious stones, Jewels, golde, and feathers. Of the least of these welkes or pcrewincles, they make certayne litle beades, of diuers sortes and colours: they make also litle bracelets, which they myngle with gaudies of golde, these they rowle about theyr armes from the elbowe to the wryest of the hande. The lyke also doe they on theyr legges

Letting of blood.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte their bodies.

The *Canibals*.

Armure of golde.

Their galantise in the warres.

Their Jewelles.

ff. iiii.

from

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



from the knee to the soles of theyr feete, in token of nobilitie, especially theyr noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare suche Jewelles, and haue theyr neckes in maner laden therewith: these beades and Jewelles, and suche other trynkets, they call *Caquiras*. Besyde these also, they weare certayne rynges of golde at theyr eares and nostrilles, whiche they boze full of holes on both sydes, so that the rynges hang vppon theyr lippes. Some of these Indians are poulde and rounded: albeit commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare long heare, whiche the women weare to the myddest of theyr shoulders, & cut it equally, especially aboute their browes: this doe they with certayne harde stones, whiche they keepe for the same purpose. The pyncipall women, when theyr teates fall, or become loose, beare them vp with barres of gold, of the length of a spanne and a halfe, well wrought, and of suche byggenesse that some of them weygh more then twoo hundred Castellans or Ducades of golde: these barres haue holes at both the endes, whereat they tye two small cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres: One of these cordes goeth ouer the shoulder, and the other vnder the arme holes, where they tye both togeather, so that by this meanes the barre beareth vppon theyr teates. Some of these chiefe women goe to the battayle with theyr husbendes, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the whiche they haue all thinges at commaundement, and execute the office of generall captaines, and cause them selues to bee carped on mens backs, in lyke maner as doe the Caciques of whom I haue spoken before. These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and colour as are they of the Islands: they are for the most part of the colour of an olyue, if there be any other difference, it is more in bignesse then otherwise, & especially they that are called *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Islande of *Giantes*, which are on the South side of the Islande of *Hispaniola*, neare vnto the coastes of the firme land, and likewise certayne other which they call *Incatos*, which are on the North syde. All which chieftly, although they bee no *Giantes*, yet are they doubtlesse the byggest of the Indians that are knowen to this day, & commonly bygger then the

Howe the women beare vppon theyr teates, with barres of golde.

The stature & colour of the Indians.  
The Indians called *Coronati*.

The Islande of *Giantes*.

*Incatos*.





the Flemmynges: and especially many of them, aswell women as men, are of very hygh stature, and are all archers both men and women. These Coronati inhabite thyrre leagues in length by these coastes, from the poynt of *Canoa* to the great ryuer which they call *Guadalcibiber*, neere vnto *Santa Maria de gratia*. As I traueled by those coastes, I fylled a bote of freshe water of that ryuer, fyve leagues in the sea from the mouth thereof where it falleth into the sea. They are called *Coronati* (that is crowned) because theyr heare is cutte rounde by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compasse about the crowne, much lyke the fryers of saint Augustines order. And because I haue spoken of theyr maner of bearyng theyr heare, heere cometh to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians: and this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thyrker, and much stronger then ours, so that in comyng to handstrokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heads with swoozdes, for so haue many swoozdes been broken on theyr heades, with litle hurte doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shall suffice for this tyme, because I haue moze largely increaced herof in my general historie of the Indies: Yet haue I neyther there noz here spoken muche of that part of the firme lande whiche is called *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne, whereof the Island of *Iucatana* is part) forasmuche as *Ferdinando Cortese* hath wrytten a large booke therof. Of the houses of these Indies, I haue spoken sufficiently els where: Yet haue I thought good to infourme your maiestie of þe building and houses which the Christians haue made in diuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two solars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte: also with strong tymer, and very sayne boozdes, in suche sorte, that any noble man may well and pleasauntly be lodged in some of them. And among other, I my selfe caused one to be builded in the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, which cost me moze then a thousand and fye hundred Castellans, beyng of such sorte that I may well entertayne and commodiously lodge any Lord or noble man, reseruing also part for my selfe and my familie: for in this may many householdes be kept, both aboue

The sculles of the Indians heades.

Newe Spayne.

The houses of the Christians in India.

Dariena,

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Gardens.

and beneath. It hath also a fayre garden, with many Orange trees, both sweete and soure: Cedars also, and Limons, of the which there is notwe great plentie in the houses of the Christians. On one syde of the garden, there runneth a fayre riuer. The situation is very pleasaunt, with a good and holosome ayre, and a fayre prospecte about the ryuer. In fine, our trust is that in fewe yeeres al thinges in these regions shal growe to a better state, accorpyng to the holy intencion of your maiestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Christians not so many as they ought to be, sozasmuche as many of them that were in this Iland, are gone to other Ilandes, and to the firme lande. For beyng for the most parte young men unmarried, and desirous daitly to see newe things, wherin mans nature delieth, they were not willing to continue long in one place, especially seeing daily other newe landes discovered, where they thought they might sooner fill their purses, by being present at the fyrst spoule: Wherin neuerthelesse their hope deceiued many of them, and especially such as had houses & habitacions in this Ilande: For I certainly belecue, confyrming my selfe herein with the iudgement of many other, that if any one Prince had no more seignories then only this Ilande, it shoulde in short tyme be such, as not to geue place either to *Sicilie* or *England*, wheras euen at this present there is nothyng wherofore it shoulde malice they prosperitie, not beyng inferiour to them in any felicitie, that in maner the heauens can graunt to any lande: beyng furthermore suche as may inryche many prouinces and kyngdomes, by reason of many ryche golde mynes that are in it, of the beste golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantitie. In this Iland, nature of her selfe bynggeth forth suche abundance of cotton, that if it were wroughe and mayntayned, there shoulde be more and better then in any part of the worlde. There is so great plentie of excellent *Cassia*, that a great quantitie is brought from thence into *Spaine*, from whence it is carped

Men are desirous of newe thynghes.

The commodities of *Hispaniola*, *England*, and *Sicilie*.

Golde mynes.

Cotton.

*Cassia*.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



carried to diuers partes of the worlde: It encreasech so muche, that it is a marueplous chyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes where Sugar is wrought, and that of suche perfectnesse and goodnesse, and in such quantitie, that shypps come laden therewith yeerely into Spayne. All such seedes, settes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Islande, become muche better, bygger, and of greater encrease then they are in any part of our Europe. And yf it chaunce otherwys that sometymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they which should tyl and husband the ground, & sowe and plant in due seasons, haue no respect hereunto, beyng impatient whyle the wheat and vines waxe ripe, beyng greuen to wanderyng and other affayres of present ganyes (as I haue sayde) as searchyng the golde mynes, fyshyng for pearles, and occuppyng marchaundises, with suche other trades, for the greedy following whereof, they neglect and contempne both sowyng and plantyng. Suche fruites as are brought out of Spayne, into this Island, prosper marueplously, and waxe ripe all tymes of the yeere, as hearbes of al sortes very good and pleasaunt to be eaten. Also many Pomgranates of the best kynde, and Oranges both sweete and soure: Lykewys many sayde Limons and Cedars, and a great quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, soure, and bytter tast. There are also many Fygge trees, which byng forth theyr fruite all the whole yeere. Lykewys those kynde of Date trees that beare Dates, and diuers other trees and plantes, which were brought out of Spayne thither. Beastes do also encrease in lyke abundaunce, & especially the heardes of Kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are now many patrons of cattaille that haue moze then two thousand beades of Meeate, and some thre or toure thousande, and some moze. Besyde these, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundred. And truely it is, that this Island hath better pasture for suche cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also hollome and cleare water, and temperate ayre, by reason whereof the heardes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better tast then ours in Spayne, because of the ranke pasture, whose moisture is better digested in the hearbe or grasse by the continuall & temperate heate of the Sonne, wherby

Sugar.

Plantes and  
herbes.Great chynges  
hynnded by res-  
pect of present  
ganyes.Oranges.  
Pomgranats.Fygges all the  
yeere.  
Dates.

Beastes.

Great heardes  
of cattayle.

Good pasture.

The effect of  
continuall and  
moderate  
heate.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



The cause of  
fat nourish-  
ment.

Beastes of long  
lyfe in regions  
about the E-  
quinoctiall line.  
Trees whose  
leaves do not  
wyther.

The canker of  
the trees.

Long lyued  
men in India.

Paradise neare  
the Equinocti-  
all line.

Sheepe and  
Dogges.

Dogges and  
Cattes become  
wythe.

being made more fat and vinctuous, it is of better and more sub-  
stant nourishment. For continuall and temperate heate, doth  
not only dratwe much moysture out of the earth, to the nourish-  
ment of such thynges as growe and are engendred in that clime,  
but doth also by moderation preserve the same from resolution  
and putrifaction, digesting also and condensatynge of the chynge  
the sayde moyst nourishment into a gummie and vinctuous sub-  
stance, as is seene in all suche thynges as growe in those regi-  
ons: and this is the only naturall cause aswell that certayne  
great beastes and of long lyfe (as the Elephant & Rhinoceros,  
with suche other) are engendred only in the regions neare unto  
the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaves of suche trees as growe  
there, do not wyther or fall, vntyll they be thrust out by other.  
accoording to the verse of the poet whiche sayeth, *Et nata pira pi-  
ris, et ficus in ficibus extant.* this is in effect, Beares growing by-  
on Beares, and Fygges upon Fygges. Plinie also wytteth,  
that suche trees are never infected with the disease of trees that  
the Latines call *Caries*, whiche we may call the worme or can-  
ker, being but a certayne putrifaction, by reason of a watrishe  
nourishment not well consolidate. The same thyng hath been  
the cause that certayne Philosophers, considering aswell that  
man is the hottest and moystest beast that is (whiche is the best  
complexion) as also that men lyue longest in certayne partes of  
India neare the Equinoctiall (where yet to this day some live to  
the age of an hundred and fyftie yeeres) were of opinion that yf  
mankynde had any beginning on the earth, that place ought by  
good reason to be vnder or not farre from the Equinoctiall line, for  
the causes aforesayde. Some of the Diuines also vpon lyke con-  
sideration, haue thought it agreeable that theyr Paradise shoulde  
be about the same, withyn the precinct of those rivers which are na-  
med in the booke of Genesis. But to let passe these thynges, & to  
returne to the hystorie. In this Iland furthermore are manye  
Sheepe, and a great number of Dogges, of the which: (as  
also of the Kyne) many are become wythe, and lyke wythe ma-  
ny Dogges and Cattes, of those whiche were brought out of  
Spayne: These (and especially the Dogges) do much hurt a-  
mong the cattayle, by reason of the negligence of the hearomen.  
There





There are also many *Dogges*, *Wormes*, and *Spiders*, and such other beastes as serue the vse of men in *Spainne*, and are muche greater then they of the first broode brought together out of *Spainne*. Some places of the *Mainde* are inhabited, although not so many as were requisite: Of the which I will say no more, but that all the regions of the *Mainde* are so well situate, that in the course of time all thynges shall come to greater perfection, by reason of the rychesse & pleasantnesse of the countrey, and fertilitie of the soyle. But nowe to speake somewhat of the principall and chiefe place of the *Mainde*, whiche is the cite of *San Domenico*: I saye, that as touchyng the buildinges, there is no cite in *Spainne*, so much for so much (no not *Barsalona*, which I haue oftentimes seene) that is to be preferred before this, generally: For the houses of *San Domenico*, are for the most parte of stone, as are they of *Barsalona*, or of so strong & wel wrought earth, that it maketh a singular and strong bynding. The situation is much better then that of *Barsalona*, by reason that the streetes are much larger and plainer, and (without comparision) more directe and streyght foorth: For being builded nowe in our time, besyde the commoditie of the place, of the fundation, the streetes were also directed with corde, compasse, and measure, wherein it excelleth all the cities that I haue seene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one syde there is no more space betwene the sea and the cite then the walles, and this is about fiftie paces, where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beate vpon the natural stones and saye coast: On the other part, hard by the side and at the foote of the houses, passeth the riuer *Ozema*, which is a marueilous poze, wherin laden shippes rise very nere to the land, and in maner vnder the house windowes, and no further from the mouth of the riuer where it encreth into the sea, then is from the foote of the hill of *Alonyia*, to the monastery of *Saint Fraunces*, or to the lodge of *Barsalona*. In the myddest of this space in the cite, is the fortrell and castle, vnder the which, and twentie paces distant from the same, passe the shippes to aryle somewhat further in the same riuer. From the entrance of the shippes vntill they cast anchor, they sayle no further from the houses of the cite then thrytie or fourtie paces, because of this close of the cite the habitation is nere to the riuer. The poze of hauch al-

The situation of Hispaniola.

The citi of San Domenico.

The riuer Ozema.

The Riuer.

So

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



so is so fayre and commodious to bestraight or billabe shippers, as  
the like is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chym-  
neis that are in this cite, are about syre hundred in number, and  
such houses as I have spoken of before: Of the which some are  
so fayre & large, that they may well receiue and lodge any lord  
or noble man of Spayne with his traine & familie, and especially  
that which *Don Diego Colon*, viceroy vnder your maiestie, hath in  
this cite, is such that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the  
lyke by a quarter in goodnesse, consydering all the commodities  
of the same. Lykewyse the situation thereof, as beyng aboue  
the sayde pozte, and altogether of stone, and haupng many  
fayre and large roomes, with as goodly a prospect of the lande  
and sea as may be deuised, seemeth vnto me so magnificall and  
pyncelyke, that your maiestie may be as well lodged therin, as  
in any of the most exquisite buylde houses of Spayne. There  
is also a Cathedral church builded of late, where aswel þ Bishop  
accozdyng to his dignitie, as also the Canons are wel endewed.  
This church is wel builded of stone and lime, and of good woork-  
manshyy. There are furthermoze thzee monasteries, bearyng  
the name of saint Dominike, saint Fraunces, and saint Marie of  
Percedes, the which are all well buylde, although not so curi-  
ously as they of Spaine. But speakyng without preiudice of a-  
ny other religious monasterie, your maiestie may be wel assu-  
red, that in these thzee monasteries god is as wel serued, as in any  
other religious house, with men of holy luyng & vertuous exam-  
ple. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour  
of pooze people, which was founde by *Michael Passamont*, trea-  
surer to your maiestie. To conclude, this cite from day to day  
increaseth in wealth and good order, aswel for that the saide Ad-  
miral & viceroy, with the lord Chauncelour and counsayle ap-  
poynted there by your maiestie, haue they continuall abydyng  
heere, as also that the rychest men of the Ilande resort hither  
for they most commodious habitation, and trade of suche mar-  
chaundies as are eyther brought out of Spayne, or sent thither  
from this Ilande, whiche nowe so aboundeth in many thynge,  
that it serueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were  
with blury requityng suche benefytes as it hys receiued from  
thence. The people of this Ilande are commonly of somewhat  
lesse

A cathedrall  
churche and  
monasteris in  
Hispaniola.

An Hospitall



lesse stature then are the Spaniards, and of a tynnyng or cleare  
 browne coloure; they haue wyues of theyr owne, and absteyne  
 from theyr daughters, sisters, and mothers: they haue large  
 foreheades, long blacke beare, and no beardes or beare in anye  
 other partes of theyr bodies, aswell men as women, except per  
 fewe, as perhaps scarcely one among a thousand. They goe as  
 naked as they were bozne, except that on the partes whiche may  
 not with honestie be seene, they weare a certayne leafe as bozne  
 as a mans hande, whiche neuerthelesse is not kept close with such  
 diligence, but that sometymes a man may see that they thynke  
 sufficiently hyd. In this Island are certayne Glowormes, that  
 shyne in the nyght as do ours, but are much bygger, and geue a  
 greater lpght: In somuch that when the men of the Islande goo  
 any tozneys in the night, they beare some of these wormes made  
 fast about theyr feete and head, in such sozt that he that should see  
 them a farrt, & ignozant of the thing, would be greatly astonished  
 thereat. By the lpght of these also, the women worke in theyr  
 houses in the nyght. These wormes they cal *Cienas*. Their light  
 lasteth for the space of thye dayes, and diminisheth as they be-  
 gin to dye vp. There is also a kynde of Crowes, whose bveath  
 synketh in the moznyng, and is sweete in the after noone: the  
 excrement whiche they auoyde, is a luyng worme. As touching  
 other thynges of this Island, whereof Peter Martyr hath more  
 largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous  
 to repeat the same agayne out of this historie of *Gonzalus Fer-*  
*dinandus*, but haue beere gathered only such thynges as eyther  
 are not touched of Peter Martyr, or not so largely declared, as  
 I haue done the lpe in all other notable thynges, whiche I haue  
 collected out of this *Summarie of Gonzalus*.

The people.

Glowormes.

Crowes sink  
 pig & sweete.

Of the Islande of *Cuba*, and other.



of the Islande of *Cuba*, and other, as the *I-*  
*landes of Sancti Iohannis*, and *Iamaica*, the  
 same may be sayde in maner in all thinges  
 as befoze of *Hispniola*: although not so  
 largely. Yet in lesse quantite do they bring  
 forth the lpe thynges, as golde, copper,  
 cattayle, trees, plantes, fyshes, and suche  
 other, of the whiche we haue spoken there.

Saint Iohn  
 his Islande,  
 Iamaica.

To

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



**Partridges.**

In *Cuba*, is a certayne kynde of Partridges, being verie litle, with theyr feathers muche of the colour of Turtle Drones, but are of muche better tast to be eaten: they are taken in great number, and being brought wyde into the houses, they become as tame within the space of thre or foure dayes as though they had been hatched there: they become exceeding fat in thort space, and are doubtlesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght be here sayd, and to speake of two marueylous thynges whiche are in this Ilande of *Cuba*: whereof the one is, that a valley conteynyng two or thre leagues in length betweene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of verie harde stones, of suche perfect roundenesse, and lyke vnto Pelletes of Gunnes, that no art can make better or more exactly pullished. Of these, some are as small as Pelletes for Handgunnes, and other so increasyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they maye serue for all sortes of Artyllarie, although they bee of byggenesse to receiue one or two or more Quintales of powder, euery Dypntale conteynyng one hundred weyght, or of what other quantitie so euer they be. These Pelletes are founde throughout al the valley within the earth, as in a mine, whiche they digge, and take out suche as they neede of al sortes. The other marueylous thyng of this Ilande is this: That farre from the sea, there issueth out of a mountayne a certayne lycour, muche lyke the Clep of Babylon, called *Bitumen*, or lyke vnto pytche, in great quantitie, and suche as is very commodious for the calkyng of shypes: this falleth continually from the rocke, and runneth into sea, in suche aboundance that it is seene stotyng aboute the water on euery syde of the sea there about, as it is byuen from place to place by the wynde or course of the water. *Quintus Cursus* wyteth in his historie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi*, where is a great Caue or Denne, in the whiche is a spring or fountayne that contynually auoydeth a great quantitie of *Bitumen*, in suche sort, that it is an easy thyng to beleue, that the stones of the walles of Babylon might be laid therewith, according as the said auctour wyteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Ilande of *Cuba*, but also such an other in new Spaine, whiche was founde

**Pelletes for Gunnes** wrought by nature.

A fountayne of the pytche of *Bitumen*

**Quintus Cursus.**

*Bitumen* of Babylon.





founde of late in the prouince of *Panuco*, where it is much better then the other of *Cuba*, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng *Panuco*. of *Styppes*.

Of the lande of *Baccalaos*, called *Terra Baccalarum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.



Soortly after that your maiestie came to the citie of *Toledo*, there arriued in the moneth of *November*, *Steuen Gomes* the pilot, who the yere before of .1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie, sailed to the North partes, and founde a great part of lande continuat from that which is called *Baccalaos*, discourlyng toward the West to the .xl. and .xli. degree, from whence he brought certayne *Indians* (for so call we all the nations of the newe found landes) of the which he brought some with him from thence, who are yet in *Toledo* at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande, as they are commonly: theyr coloure is muche lyke the other of the firme lande: they are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of diuers beastes, both wyld and tame. In this lande are many excellent furies, as *Parterns*, *Sables*, and such other ryche furies, of the which the sayd pilot brought some with him into *Spayne*: they haue *spuer*, and *copper*, & certayne other metals: they are *Idolaters*, and honour the *Somme* and *Moone*, and are seduced with such superstition and errours as are they of the firme. And to haue wypten thus much it may suffice, of suche thynges as haue seemed to me most woorthy to be noted in the *Summarie* of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*, wypten to *Theemperours* maiestie.

Particularly of newe *Spayne*, called *Noua Hispania*, or *Mexico*.



The *Spayne*, is that part of the continent of firme lande that lyeth West and South from the land of *Florida*: this was subdued to the empire of *Castile* by the ryght noble gentelman *Ferdinando Cortese* the marquisse of the vale of *Quaraca*. In this lande are many prouinces, concepyng in them in  
Si maner

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Notable thynges

The citie of Mexico, or Tenochtitlan.  
 Solde and silver.  
 Silke. Cotton. Maize. Woode. Sugar.  
 Shelles for money.  
 Eagle. Hawks.  
 Hauking and hunting.  
 Papir.  
 Women sumptuously appareld.  
 A warlike nation.  
 Captines sacrificed to Idoles.

maner Innumerable cities, among which, that is the chiefe whyche the Indians cal *Mexico*, or *Tenochtitlan*, consyſtyng of more then ſiue hundred thousand inhabitauntes: It ſtandeth in the middelt of a lake of ſalte water, as doth *Venece* in the ſea, the lake conteyneth fourtie Perſian miles, called *Parafange*, euery one conſyſting of .xxx. furlonges, and more, as ſome ſay. In theſe regions is found great plentie of gold, ſyluer, & pretious ſtones, with innumerable other thynges, both neceſſary for the lyfe of man, & pleaſant, as *Silke*, *Bombaline cotton*, *Alame*, *Safferne*, *Woad*, with diuers other thynges, wherwith cloth and *Silke* is dyed. There is alſo ſuch abundaunce of ſuger, that certayne Spaniſh ſhippes are peereleſy ſeaughted therewith, and bying the ſame into *Spaine*, from whence it is carped in maner to al partes of *Chriſtendome*. The inhabitants of *Mexico* are ſubtile people, and vſe much craft in theyr bargaining: they haue not the vſe of gold and ſyluer money, but vſe in the ſteade thereof the halfe ſhelles of *Almonds*, which kind of Barbarous money they cal *Cocoa*, or *Cacanzate*. In maner al kinds of coyne are there very good cheape, eſpecially barley and wheate. They haue great plentie of *Hartes*, *wylde Bozes*, *Lions*, *Leopardes*, and *Tigers*, whiche beaſtes wander in maner in euery place. The region is moſt commodious for hauking and hunting, for the great abundaunce it hath of beaſtes and foules: But the people exerciſe al theyr cunning in makyng the images of their idolatry, and in painting. Theyr women are valiant, and ſumptuous in theyr apparell, and other tyemenes: for they ſo rycheleſy ſpyng and beſet the ſame with pearles, pretious ſtones, and golde, that nothyng can be more excellent: they haue a kynde of paper greatly differing from ours, in this they expreſſe their mindes by certayne figures, for they haue not otherwyle theſe of letters. The nation is deſpious of warre, and doth not long keepe the conditions of peace vniuolated: but deſpeth rather in ciuile and moſt cruell battayle among them ſelues, then to liue in peace and quietneſſe. Such as in the warres fal by any meanes into the handes of theyr enemies, eſther by ſubmyſſion or otherwyle, are partly ſacrificed to the *Idoles*, and the reſydue geuen to the ſouldiers to be eaten, in lyke maner as we rewarde dogges and haukes with part of theyr pray. They haue innumerable *Idoles*, whiche euery one maketh



maketh for his particuler god, after the phantasse of his owne  
brayne, and geueth therto due honour, albeit at this day they  
do by litle and litle leaue of theyr barbarous spercenesse, & with  
our religion imbrace better maners: For they nowe professe  
the sayth of Christ, and in his name pray vnto God the Father.

## Of Peru.



The prouince called *Peru*, was also named  
*Noua Castilia*, by them that first founde it.  
This region is the West part of *America*,  
and is situate in the longitude of .290. de-  
grees, proce. ding from the West to the  
East, and Southward begynneth syue de-  
grees beyonde the Equinoctiall line, and  
is extended very farre into the South. This is taken to be the  
rychest land in golde, siluer, pearles, precious stones, and spices,  
that euer was founde yet to this day. For gold is there in suche  
plentie that they make pyssots therof, and other vessels applied  
to sylchp uses. But this is moze to be marueyled at, that in a citie  
called *Coll:o* was founde a house al covered with massie places of  
gold. In theyr warres also theyr harnesse is of gold and siluer.  
Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, slyngs, darts, and pykes.  
The inhabitauntes are warrellyke people, and of great agilitie.  
They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region  
is exceeding fruitfull, and yeldeth corne twyse in the yeere. It is  
so flozpyng with many sayre woods, mountaynes, rpuers, and  
other both pleasaunt & necessarie commodities, that it seemeth in  
a maner an earthly Paradise: it hath diuers kynds of beastes, and  
yet none hurtful, or of rauenyng kynde. Theyr sheepe are of  
suche heyghe, that they vse them in steede of Horses: some wyte  
that they are as bygge as the young Foles of Camelles, and  
that theyr wooll is verpe softe and syne: also that the Swis  
byng soozth Lambes twyse a yeere. The people are wyttie,  
and of gentle behauiour, cunnyng also in artes, saythfull of pro-  
mise, and of maners not greatly to be discommended, saue only  
that they are ignorant of Christ, who neuerthelesse is now know-  
en vnto them in many places, as our hope is he halbe daylie  
Gg ii moze

Peru is the  
rychest land  
that is know-  
en.

A house coue-  
red with golde.

Harnesse of  
golde.

A fruitfull  
region.

Great Sheepe.

The dutie of  
Christian  
Princes.



Notable thynges

more and more, yf all Princes wpll herein put theyr helpynge bandes to the plowe of our Lozde, and send labourers into his vineyarde.

Of the great ryuer called *Rio de la Plata* (that is) the ryuer of siluer.



This ryuer reacheth very farre in length & breadth, and is called *Vrnai*, in the Indian tongue. Into this falleth an other riuer named *Paraué*. The first that sayled into the riuer of *Plata*, was *Iohn Dias Solis*, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spaine *Ferdinandus* made Admirall of these seas. In the

ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche *Iohn Dias* named *Martinus Grattias*, because a pilot of his, so called, was buried there. This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer, and is distant from the mouth of the same about fourtie leagues. As the sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Ilande, he was sodenly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that prynciple assailed hym. Therewith neuerthelesse theyr barbarous crueltie was not satisfied vntyll they had toyne hym in peeces, and deuoured hym: But many yeeres after, the Emperours *Maestie*, and Kyng of Spaine *Charles* the syfte, sent forth *Sebastian Cabot* (a man of great courage & skylful in *Cosmographie*, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the Starrs of the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Indians of *Tbarsis*, *Ophir*, *Cipango*, and *Coi Catbai*. Recepyng therefore his commission, and procedyng forwarde on his viage, he arriued by chaunce at this Ilande: the cause whereof was, that the pryncipall vessell was lost by *shypwacke*, and the men that saued theyr lyues by *swymmyng* were recepyed into our *shyppes*. Percepyng therefore that by reason of this chaunce he coulde by no meanes perfourme his viage attempted, he extended to expugne the sayde Ilande, and thereupon to conueygh his victuals to land, to prepare his souldiers to the inuasion, to plant colonies, & to erect fortresses by the riuers side, whereby the Spaniards might be defended from the violence of the Barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was rich in gold & siluer. Which thing did so encozage him, that

without

*Paraué*.

*Iohn Dias Solis*.  
The Ilande *Martinus Grattias*.

The viage of *Sebastian Cabot* to the riuer of *Plata*.  
*Charles*.  
*Ophir*.  
*Cipango*.  
*Catbai*.





Without respecte of peryl he thought best to expugne it by one meancs or other, wherein his boldnesse tooke good effecte, as often tymes chaunceth in great assayes . Furthermoze as touchyng the ryuer, *Sebastian Cabote* made relation, that he neuer sawe any comparable vnto this in breadyth and deapth: For whereas it falleth into the sea, it conteyneth .xxv. leagues in breadyth: From the mouth of the ryuer, *Cabote* sailed by the same into the lande for the space of thre hundred and fiftie leagues, as he wyrteth in his owne carde . That it is of great deapth, may hereby be consydered, that many great ryuers fall into it, so that the chanell can not be shalowe that conteyneth such aboundance of water, and suche plentie of good and great fyshes: For there is in maner no fysh in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. Assoone as the Spanyarde were set alande, they made a pproofe if the soyle were fruitefull to beare coyne . Takynge therefore fyttye graynes of wheate, and committynge the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they geathered thereof two thousand and fiftie at December next folowynge: (wherin some being deceyued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wrytten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fiftie thousande and two: ) the lyke fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulle . Furthermoze thynhabitauntes declared, that not farre from that place, there are great and hygh mountaines, in the which is founde great plentie of golde: and no great distance from the same, to be other mountaynes no lesse fruitefull of syluer, and many other thinges, long to rehearse . Thynhabitauntes are paynefull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherein they take great pleasure, and haue therefore great plentie of bread of *Mairzum* . There are sheepe of such byggenesse, that they compare them to young Camels or Asses, as some say: theyr wooll is very fine, and nearest vnto the fynnesse of sylke . There are also beastes of diuers kyndes . Among men there is this difference, that such as liue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most part lyke vnto the men of our regions: but they that dwell aboute the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr colour thereof) are blackyshe, or purple, of the coloure of fine Iron or Steele . This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr scete and legges are lyke the legges and sette of the foule called the *Dystreche*.

The ryuer of Plata.

Mountaines fruitefullnes.

Mountaines conteyning golde and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.

Men with besetted legges.

¶

Of

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

453



Notable thynges

Of the landes of *Laborador* and *Baccalaos*, lying  
west and northwest from England, and be-  
ing part of the firme lande of the  
VVest Indies.



Any haue traueyled to search the coaste of  
the lande of *Laborador*, aswell to thintent to  
knowe howe farre or whyther it reacheth,  
as also whether there be any passage by sea  
through the same into the sea of *Smy* and the  
Ilandes of *Molucca*, whiche are vnder the  
Equinoctiall lyne, thynkynge that the way  
whither should greatly be shortened by this viage. The Spany-  
ardes, as to whose ryght the sayde Ilandes of spices parteyne,  
dyd sytt seeke to fynde the same by this way. The Portugales  
also haupng the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauayle to  
fynde the same, although hitherto neyther any suche passage is  
founde, or the ende of that lande. In the yecre a thousande and  
foue hundredeth, *Gasper Cortesreales*, made a viage thither with  
two *Carauelles*, but found not the streight or passage he sought.  
At his being there, he named the Ilands that lye in the mouth  
of y<sup>e</sup> gulfe *Quadrado*, after his name *Cortesreales*, lying in the sy-  
ctic degree, and moze, & brought from that land about threescore  
men for slaues: He greatly marueyled to behold the huge quan-  
tite of snowe & Ice, for the sea is there frozen exceedingly. Chin-  
habitanes are men of good corpozature, although tawny lyke  
the Indies, and laborious: They paynt theyr bodies, and weare  
braleettes and hoopcs of syluer and copper: theyr apparell is  
made of the skynnes of *Barternes*, & dyuers other beastes, whi-  
che they weare with the heare inwarde in winter, and outwarde  
in sommer. This apparell they gyde to theyr bodies with  
gyrdels made of cotton, or the synewes of fyshes and beastes.  
They eate fysh moze then any other thyng, and especially *Dal-*  
*mons*, although they haue soules and fruite. They make theyr  
houses of tyMBER, wherof they haue great plentie: and in the  
steade of tiles, couer them with the skynnes of fyshes and beastes.  
It is sayde also that there are *Gryfes* in this lande, and that the  
*Bears* and many other beastes and soules are whyte. To this  
and

The way to  
the Ilandes of  
*Molucca* by the  
north sea.

The Spanys  
ardes.

*Gasper Cor-*  
*tesreales.*

*Insula Cortes-*  
*reales.*  
Snowe and  
Ice.

*Furres.*

*Fysh.*

*Gryfes.*  
*Bears.*

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



and the Mandes about the same, the Britons are accustomed to  
 refoze, as men of nature agreeable vnto them, and bozne vnder  
 the same altitude and temperature. The Portugals also sayled  
 thither with the pilot called *Iohn Scoluo*, and the Englyshe men  
 with *Sebastian Cabot*.

The Britons.  
 Sebastian  
 Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of *Baccallaos*, is a great tract, and the  
 greatest altitude thereof is .xlviii. degrees and a halfe. *Sebastian*  
*Cabot* was the first that brought any knowlrdge of this land. For  
 being in England in the dayes of kyng *Henry the seuenth*, he  
 furnyshed two shypes at his owne charges, or (as some say) at the  
 kynges, whom he perswaded that a passage myght be founde to  
*Cathay* by the North seas, and that spycies myght be brought  
 from thence sooner by that way then by the vlage the Portugals  
 vse by the sea of *Sur*. He went also to knowe what maner of  
 landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym thre  
 hundred men, and directed his course by the tract of *Islande*, by  
 on the Cape of *Laborador* at fyfite and eight degrees, affirming  
 that in the moneth of *July* there was such cold, & heapes of *Ice*,  
 that he durst passe no further: also that the daies were very long,  
 and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Cer-  
 tayne it is, that at the threescore degrees, the longest day is of  
 eighteene houres. But considering the cold, and the strangenesse  
 of the vnknown lande, he turned his course from thence to the  
 West, folowing the coast of the land of *Baccallaos* vnto the thir-  
 tie & eight degrees, from whence he returned to Englande. To  
 conclude, the Britons and Danes, haue sayled to the *Baccallaos*, and  
*Jaques Cartier* a french man was there twice with thre Galeons:  
 as one in the yeere .xxiiii. and the other in the .xxv. and chose the  
 land to inhabite from the .xv. degrees to the .li. being as good a  
 land as *Fraunce*, and all thynges therein commune to suche as  
 first possesse the same. Of these landes, *Iacobus Gastaldus* wy-  
 teth thus. The new land of *Baccallaos*, is a colde region, whose  
 inhabitauntes are Idolatours, and praye to the *Sonne* and  
*Moone*, and dyuers *Idoles*: they are whyte people, and ve-  
 ry rusticall, for they eate fleshe and fysh and all other thynges  
 rawe. Sometymes also they eate mans fleshe printlie, so that  
 they *Cacique* haue no knowledg thereof. The apparrel of both  
 the men and women, is made of *Beares skynnes*, although they  
 haue

The lande of  
 Baccallaos.

The vlage of  
 Cabot in the  
 dayes of king  
 Henry the  
 seuenth.

Ice in July.

Baccallaos.

Britons.  
 Danes.  
 Jaques Cartier.

The people of  
 Baccallaos.

¶

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



## Notable thynges

haue **Sables** and **Partrines**, not greatly esteemed, because they are litle. Some of them go naked in Sommer, and weare apparrell only in winter. The **Bytons** and **Frenchmen** are accustomed to take fysh in the coastes of these landes, where is founde great plentie of **Tunnies**, which inhabitants cal *Baccallaos*, wherof the land was so named. Northward from the region of *Baccallaos*, is the lande of *Laborador*, all full of mountaynes and great woods, in which are many **Beares** & wild **Bores**. The inhabitants are **Idolatours**, and warlike people, apparelled as are they of *Baccallaos*. In al this new land, is neyther ciitie or castell, but they lyue in companies like herdes of beastes.

Fishing for  
Tunnies.  
Labrador,

### The discovering of the land of *Florida*.

John Vonce.  
Water of great  
vertue, of this  
reade in the  
Decades.



The gouernour of the *Ilande of Boriquena*, **John Vonce** of *Leon*, beyng discharged of his office, and very ryche, furnished & sent forth two **Carauels** to seeke the *Ilands* of *Boiuca*, in the which the **Indians** affirmed to be a fountayne or spring whose water is so vertue to make old men young. Whyle

he trauallyed syre monethes, with outragious desire among many *Ilandes* to fynde that he sought, and coulde fynde no token of any suche fountayne, he entred into *Bemini*, and discovered the lande of *Florida*, in the yeere 1512. on **Easter** day, whiche the **Spaniards** cal the stopyng day of *Pascha*. wherby they named that lande *Florida*. And supposyng that great ryches myght be brought from thence, he returned into *Spayne*, and couenanted with king *Ferdinando*, as touchyng the trade: and by the intercession of *Nicolas de Ouando*, and *Peter Nunnez de Gusman*, the kyng byd not only make hym gouernour of *Bemini* and *Florida*, but also sent forth with hym thre shyppes from *Sciulle* towards his second viage, in the yeere 1515. He touched in the *Ilande* of *Guaccana*, otherwysse called *Guadalupea*, and sent to lande certayne of his men with the **Laundresses** of the shyppes: whom the **Canibales** (lying in ambushe) assailed with theyr inuenomed arrowes, and slaying the most part, caried away the women. With this euill beginning, **John Vonce** departed from hence to *Boriquen*, and from thence to *Florida*, where he went  
alands

Bemini,

Guaccana.

The Canis  
dales.

Boyington.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





alande with his souldyers, to espie a place most commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie: But the Indians commyng forth agaynst him to defende the entrance, assayled the Spanyarden fiercely, and slue and wounded many of them. At whiche conflicte also hee him selfe, beyng wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of *Cuba*: and so endyng his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheesse hee had before gotten at *Saint Iohans of Boriquen*. This *John Ponce* had before sayled with *Christopher Colon* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* in the yeere 1493. Hee was a gentle souldyer in the warres of this Ilande, and captayne of the prouince of *Higuei* for *Nicolas de Ouardo* that conquested the same. The region of *Florida* is a poynt or cape of lande reachyng into the sea lyke vnto a tongue, beyng a famous and notozious place among the Indians, by reason of many Spanyarden that haue been slayne there. But whereas by fame this *Florida* was esteemed a ryche lande, many valiant and noble men desyred the conquest thereof, among whom *Ferdinando de Soto* (who had before been a captayne in *Pernu*, and greatly inryched by the imprisonment of kyng *Atabaliba*) attempted a viage thither with a good bande of men, and spent spue yeeres in seekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this land had been lyke vnto *Pernu*. In fine, hee dyed there, and was the destruction and vndoing of all that went with him, without inhabytyng that lande; in the whiche the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers, and strong & hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyarden not discouraged by these misadventures, after the death of *Ferdinando Soto*, many woorthy gentlemen desyred this conquest in the yeere 1544. among whom was *Iulian Samano*, and *Peter de Abumada*, beyng betherne, and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterpryse. But neyther the Emperour beyng then in *Germanie*, neyther the prince *Don Philip* his son, who gouerned all the kyngdomes of *Castile* and *Aragone*, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies, would in any case agree to the conquest. Nevertheless, not bitterly contemnyng the matter, which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyle be brought to passe, they sent thither *Fryer Luys*, Cancell of *Baluastro*, with other Fryers of the order of *Saint Dominike*, who offered them selues

The death of  
John Ponce.

The lande of  
Florida.

Ferdinando  
de Soto.

The valiant  
myndes of the  
Spanyarden.

The thyrde at-  
tempt of the  
conquest of  
Florida.

Certaine Fry-  
ers attempt the  
conquest onely  
with prayes,  
but with euill  
successe.

selues

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



## Notable thynges

schewes to convert the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the sayth of Christ, and obedience to the Emperour, onely with wordes. The Fryer therfore going forwarde on his viage at the kynges charges, in the yeere. 1549. went aland with foure other Fryers which he tooke with him, and certayne martyrs, without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preaching, many of the Indians of the sayde Florida resorted to the sea syde, where without gpyng audience to his wordes, they carryed him away, with thre other of his companions, and dyd eate them, wherby they suffred martyrdome for the sayth of Christ: the residue that escaped, made hark to the shyppe, and kept them selues for confessours, as some say. Many that fauour the intent of the Fryers, doe nowe consider that by that means the Indians could not be brought to our friendship and religion: neuerthelesse, that if it could so haue been brought to passe, it had been better. There came of late from that shyppe, one that had been the page of *Ferdinando de Soto*, who declared that the Indians hanged by the skynes, with the heades and crownes of the sayd Fryers in one of theyr Temples.

The Fryers  
are slaine and  
eaten.

A newe kynde  
of disgraving.



FOR. M. CAP. FVR BY-  
SHERS PASSAGE BY THE  
NORTHVVEST.

OF CHINA IN CATHAYO, SITYATED  
IN THE EAST SIDE OF  
GREAT ASY.

OF THE ILAND GIAPAN, AND OTHER  
LITTLE ILES IN TTE EAST OCEAN, BY  
THE VVAY FROM CATHAYO  
TO THE MOLVCCAES.

BY RICHARDE WILLES.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



085  
**For M. Captayne Furbers passage by the Northwest.  
 To the right honourable and vertuous Ladie, the  
 Lady Anne, Countesse of VVarwyke.**



**R**oure famous wayes there be spoken of to those fruitfull and wealthy Ilandes, we doe vsually call *Moluccaes*, continually haunted for gayne, and dayly trauepled for riches therein growyng. These Ilandes although they stand East from our Meridian, distant almost halfe the length of the world, in extreme heate, vnder the Equinoctial lync, possessed of Indelles and Barbares: yet by our neyghbours great aboundance of wealth there is paynfully sought, in respect of the voyage decreely bought, and from thence daungerously brought home vnto vs. Our neyghbours I call the *Portugalles* in comparison of the *Moluccbians* for neerenesse vnto vs, for lyke situation westwarde as we haue, for they vsuall trade with vs, for that the farre South: afterlynges doe know this parte of Europe by no other name then *Portugall*, not greatly acquainted as yet with the other nations thereof. Theyr voyage is well vnderstoode of all men, and the Southeasterne way rounde about *Affrike* by the cape of *Good hope*, more spoken of, better knowne & trauepled than that it may seeme needefull to discourse thereof any further.

1. By the south  
 east.

2. By the south  
 west.

The seconde way lyeth South-west, betwixt the West Indie or South America, and the South continent, through that narrow streite where *Magellanus* first of all men that euer we doe reade of, passed these later yeeres, leauyng therevnto therfore his name. This way no doubt the *Spanyards* would commonly take, for that it lyeth neare vnto their dominions there, could the Easterne current and leuant wyndes as easily suffer them to returne, as speedily therewith they may be carryed thither: for the which difficultie or rather impossibilitie of stryuing agaynst the force both of wynde and streame, this passage is little or nothyng vled, although it be very well knowen.

3. By the north  
 east.

The thyrde way by the North-east, beyonde all Europe and *Asie*, that woorthy and renowned knight *sir Hugh Willoughby* sought





sought to his perill, enforced there to end his life for colde, con-  
 galed and frozen to death. And truly this may consist rather  
 in the imagination of Geographers, than allowable either in rea-  
 son, or approued by experience, as wel it may appeare by the dan-  
 gerous trending of the *Seythly Cape* set by *Ortelius* vnder the  
 eight degree North, by the vntwely saytyng in that *Northerne*  
 sea allwayes cladde with Ice and Snow, or at the least continu-  
 ally pestred therewith, if happely it be at any tyme dissolued: be-  
 sydes bayes & shelves, the water warryng moze shallow towardes  
 the East, that we say nothyng of the foule mystes and darke fogs  
 in the colde climate, of the litle power of the Sunne to cleare the  
 ayre, of the vncomfortable nyghtes, so neare the Pole, syue mo-  
 nethes long.

*Ortel. tab.*  
*Asia. 3.*

A fourth way to goe vnto these aforesayde happy *Ilandes*  
*Molucca*, by *Humphrey Gilberte*, a learned and valiant Knyght,  
 discourseth of at large in his new passage to *Cathayo*, and was at-  
 tempted the last yeere by your Ho. seruant. *W. Cap. Furbishers*,  
 presently takyng vpon him with his company fully to discover  
 the same, and is now, if I be not deceyued, ready for his voyage.  
 The enterpryse of it selfe beyng vertuous, the facte must doubt-  
 lesse deserue bygh prayse, and whansoever it shall be finished, the  
 fruites thereof can not be small: where vertue is gude, there is  
 fame a folower, and fortune a Companion. But the way is dan-  
 gerous, the passage vncertaine, the voyage not thoroughly knowen,  
 and therfore gaynesayde by many, after this maner.

4. By the  
 Northwest.

First, who can assure vs of any passage rather by the North-  
 west, than by the Northeast? doe not both wayes lye in equall  
 distance from the North pole? stande not the North capes of  
 eyther continent vnder lyke eleuation? Is not the Ocean sea be-  
 yonde *America* farther distant from our *Peruvian* by 30. or 40.  
 degrees West, than the extreme pointes of *Cathayo* Eastward,  
 if *Ortelius* generall Carte of the world be true? In the Northeast  
 that noble Knyght *sic Hug. Willoughby* perished for golde: and  
 can you than promyse a passenger any better hay by the North-  
 west? who hath gone for triall sake, at any tyme, this way out of  
*Europe* to *Cathayo*?

Ob. 1.

In Theatra.

If you seeke the aduyle heerein of such as make profession in  
 Cosmographie, *Ptolome*, the father of Geographie, and his el-  
 dest

Ob. 2.



best chosen, will and were by thei Mappes with a negative, conchuyng moste of the sea within the land, and making an end of the world northward, neare the. 36. degre. The same opinion, when learning chiefly flourish, was receiued in the Romanes tyme, as by their Poetes wytynges it may appeare: *Et te colesultima Thule*, sayd *Virgile*, being of opinion, that *Iselant* was the extreme parte of the world habitable towarde the North. *Ioseph Moletius* an Italian, and *Mercator* a Germane, for knowledge men able to be compared wth the best Geographers of our time, the one in his halfe Spheres of the whole worlde, the other in some of his great Globes, haue continued the West Indische lande, men to the North Pole, and consequently, cut of all passage by sea that way.

The same Doctors, *Mercator* in other of his Globes and *Mappes*, *Moletius* in his sea carde, neuerthelesse doubting of so great continuance of the former continent, haue opened a goulph betwixt the West Indies and the extreme northerne lande: but suche a one, that ether is not to be trauesyld for the causes in the first Obteccion alleaged, or cleane shutt up from vs in *Europe* by *Greenland* the South ende whereof *Moletius* maketh firme lande with *America*, the north parte continent with *Lapponlande* and *Norway*.

Ob. 3.

Thyrdly, the greatest fauourers of this voyage, can not deny but that if any such passage be, it lyeth subiect vnto Ple and snow for the most parte of the yeere, whereas it standeth in the edge of the frostie Zone. Before the Sunne hath warmed the ayre, and dissolved the Ple, eche one well knoweth that there can be no saylyng: the Ple once broken through the continuall abode, the Sunne maketh a certayne season in those partes: how shall it be possible for so weake a vessel as a Shyppe is, to holde out any whole Mandes, as it were, of Ple continually beating on eche syde, and at the mouth of that goulphe, sllyng downe furiously from the North, safely to passe, when whole mountaynes of Ple and snow shalbe comblen downe vpon her.

Ob. 4.

Wel, graunt the west Indies not to continue continent vnto the Pole, graunt there be a passage betwixt these two landes, let the goulph be neare vs than commonly in cardes we fynde it set, namely, betwixt the. 61. & 64. degrees north, as *Genova Frisius* in his



his Mappes and Globes imagineth it, and is left by our counterman *Sebastian Cabote*, in his table, the which my good Lord your father hath at *Cheynes*, and so tryed this last yeere by your Honours seruante as hee reported, and his carde and compasse doe witness. Let the way bee boyde of all difficulties, yet doeth it not folowe that we haue free passage to *Catayo*. For examples sake. You may trende all *Norway*, *Finnmark*, and *Lapponlande*, and than bow Southwards to *sainct Nicolas* in *Moscovia*: you may lykewylse in the *Mediterranean* sea seeke *Constantinople*, and the mouth of *Tanais*: yet is there no passage by sea through *Moscovia*, into *Pont Eurine*, now called *Mare Maggione*. Agayne, in the aforesayde *Mediterranean* sea, we sayle to *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, the *Barbares* bying theyr pearle and spices from the *Moluccas* by the read sea and *Arabian* golph to *Sues*, scarcely thre dayes tourney from the aforesayde hauen: yet haue we no way by sea, from *Alexandria* to the *Moluccas*, for that *Isthmos* or litle streicte of lande betwixt the two seas. In lyke maner, although the northerne passage bee free at 61. degrees latitude, and the *West Ocean* beyonde *America*, vsually called *Mar del Zur*, knowne to be open at 40. degrees eleuation, for the *Ilande Giapan*, yea, 300. leagues northerly aboue *Giapan*: yet may there bee lande to hynder the through passage that way by sea, as in the examples aforesayde it falleth out, *Asia* and *America* there beinge ioyned together in one continent. He can this opinion seeme altogether frivolous vnto any one that diligently peruseth our *Cosmographers* doynages. *Iosaphus Moletius* is of that mynde, not onely in his playne hemispheres of the world, but also in his sea carde. The *French Geographers* in lyke maner, bee of the same opinion, as by their *Mappe* cut out in forme of a harte you may perceyue: as though the *West Indies* were parte of *Asia*. Whiche sentence well agreeth with that olde conclusion in the scholes. *Quidquid prater Africam et Europam est, Asia est.* Whatsoeuer land doeth neyther appertayne vnto *Africke* nor to *Europe*, is parte of *Asia*.

Further.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



5. 20.

Furthermore it were to small purpose to make so long, so paynefull, so doubtfull a voyage by such a new founde way, if in *Cathayo* you should neyther be sufficed to laude for silkes and siluer, nor able to fetch the *Molucca* spices and pearle for pirace in those seas. Of a lawe denyng all Aliens to enter into *China*, and forbidding all the inhabiteurs vnder a great penaltie to let in any stranger into that countreys, shall you reade in the reposit of *Galeotto Perera* there imprisoned with other Portugalkes: as also in the *Siayonische* letters, howe for that cause the woorthie trauepler *Xanicus* bargayned with a Barbarian Marchaunt for a great sum of Pepper to be brought into *Canton*, a pozte in *Cathayo*. The great and daungerous piracie vled in that seas, no man can be ignorant of, that listeth to reade the *Siayonische* and *East Indian* historie.

Ob. 6.

Finally, all this great labour would bee lost, all these charges spent in vayne, if in the ende our traueplers myght not be able to returne agayne, and byng safely home into theyr owne natyue countrey, that wealth and riches, they in forreyn regions with aduerture of goodes, and daunger of theyr luyes, haue sought for. By the Northeast there is no way, the Southeast passage the Portugalles doe hold, as Lodes of that seas. At the Southwest *Magellanus* experience hath partly taught vs, and partly we are perswaded by reason, howe the Easterne current strycketh so furiously on that stricte, and falleth with such force into that narrow grouppe, that hardely any shyppe can returne that way, into our *West Ocean*, out of *Mar del Sur*. The which, if it be true, as truly it is, than may we say, that the aforesayde Easterne current or leuant course of waters continually following after the heavenly motions, looseth not alwaye rather his force, but is doubled rather by an other current from out the Northeast, in the passage betwixt *America* and the *North land*, whither it is of necessitie carryed: hauing none other way to maintaine its selfe in circular motion, and consequently the force and fury thereof to be no lesse in the stricte of *Anian*, wher it stricketh south into *Mar del Sur*, beyond *America* (if any such stricte of sea there be) than in *Magellans* strete both strictes being of lyke breadth: as in *Belogvine Zaltorius* table of new France, and in *Don Diego Hermans de Toledo* his carde for navigation in that region we doe fynde precisely

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





cisely set downe.

Neuerthelesse to approue that there iseth a way to *Cathayo* at the Northwest, from out of Europe, we haue experyence, namely of thre brethren that went that iourney, as *Gemma Frisius* recordeth, and left a name vnto that streite, whereby nowe it is called *Fretum trium Fratrum*. We do reade againe of a Portugall that passed this streite, of whom *P. Furbisher* speaketh, that was imprisoned therefore many yeeres in *Lesbona*, to verifie the olde Spanyshe prouerbe, I suffer for do-  
 yng wel. Likewile *An. Vrdaneta* a sreyer of *Mexico* came out of *Mar del Zur* this way into *Germanie*: his Carde, for he was a great discoverer, made by his owne experyence and trauayle in that voyage, hath been seene by gentlemen of good credite.

Now yf the obseruation and remembrance of thyngs breedeth experyence, and of experyence proceedeth art, and the certeine knowledg we haue in al faculties, as y best Philosophers that euer were do affyrme: truly the voyage of these aforesayd trauail-  
 lers that haue gone out of Europe into *Mar del Zur*, and retur-  
 ned thence at the Northwest, doo moste evidently conclude that way to be nauigable, and that passage free. So much the more we are so to thynke, for that the fyrste principle and chiefe grounde in all Geographie, as great *Peolome* sayth, is the histo-  
 rie of trauel, that is, reportes made by trauaylers skylfull in *Ge-  
 ometrie* & *Astronomie*, of al suche thinges in their iourney as to Geographie do belong. It only then remaineth, that we now an-  
 swere to those argumentes that seemed to make against this  
 former conclusion.

*Cic. i. de orat.*  
*Arist. pri.*  
*Metaph.*

*Lib. i. Geog.*  
*Cap. 2.*

The fyrste objection is of no force, that generall table of the worlde set forth by *Ortelius* or *Mercator*, for it greatly skil-  
 leth not, being vnkylfully drawn for that poynt: as manifest-  
 ly it may appeare vnto any one that conferreth the same with  
*Gemma Frisius* vniuersal mappe, with his round quartered carde,  
 with his globe, with *Sobastian Cabota* his table, and *Ortelius* ge-  
 nerrall Dappe alone, worthly preferred in this case before all  
*Mercator* and *Ortelius* other doinges: for that *Cabota* was not  
 only a skilful sea man, but a long trauaister, & such a one as entred  
 personally that streite, sent by king *Henry the seuerth* to make  
 this aforesayd discovery, as in his owne discourse of nauigation

*Sol. i.*

Whi you

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



you may reade in his carde drawn with his owne hande, the mouth of the northwesternne streit lieth neare the. 318. Meridian, betwixt .61. and .64. degrees in elcuation, continuing the same breadth about .10 degrees west, where it openeth southerly more and more, vntill it come vnder the tropike of Cancer, and so runneth into *Mar del Zur*, at the least .18. degrees more in breadth there, then it was where it first began: otherwyle I coulde as well imagine this passage to be more vnlykely then the voyage to *Mosconia*, and more impossible then it for the farre situation and continuance thereof in þ frosty clim: as nowe I can affyrme it to be very possible and most lykely in comparison thereof, for that it nether coasteth so farre north as the *Mosconian* passage doth, nether is this streite so long as that, before it bowe downe southerly towardes the Sonne agayne.

Sol. 2.

The seconde argument concludeth nothing. *Toleme* knewe not what was aboue .16. degrees south beyonde the equinoctiall lyne, he was ignozant of all passages northwarde from the elcuation of .63. he knewe no Ocean sea beyonde *Asia*, yet haue the *Portugalles* trended þ Cape of good hope at the south poynte of *Afrike*, and traauyled to *Giapan* an *Ilande* in the east Ocean, betwixt *Asia* & *America*: our marchants in þ time of king Edward the sixt discovered the *Mosconian* passage farther north then *Tbule*, and shewed *Greenlande* not to be continent with *Lapponlande*, and *Norway*: the lyke our northwesternne traauylers haue done, declaring, by theyr nauigation that way, the ignozance of all *Cosmographers* that ether do ioyne *Greenlande* with *America*, or continue the west *Indies* with that frosty region vnder the north pole. As for *Virgil* he sauge accordingly to þ knowledge of men in his time, as an other Poete dyd of the hotte Zone,

Onced. 1. Met.

*Quarum quæ media est, non est habitabilis æstus.* Imaginyng, as most men then dyd, *Zonam torridam*, the hot Zone, to be altogether dishabited for heat, though presently we knowe many famous and worthy kingdomes and cities in that part of the earth, and the *Iland* of *Saint Thomas* neare *Aethiopia*, and the welch *Ilands* for the which chiefly al these voyages are taken in hande, to be inhabited euen vnder the equinoctiall lyne.

Sol. 3.

To answer the third obiection, besides *Cabota* & al other traauylers nauigations, þ only credit of *M. Furbisher* may suffice, who lately



lately throug h al these Ilands of Ise, and mountaines of shorve, passed that way, euen beyond the gulphe that tumblede downe from the North, and in some places though he were one ynche thicke Ise, as he returning in August dyd, came home safelye agayne.

The fourth argument is altogether frivolous & vayne, for Sol. 4. neyther is there any isthmus or stret of land betwixt *America* and *Asia*, ne can these two landes toynly be one continent. The Lib. Geog. first part of my answer is manifestly allowed of by *Homer*, whom that excellent Geographer *Strabo* foloweth, velyng hym in this facultie the pisse. The authour of that booke tykwyle περικοσμου to *Alexander*, attributed vnto *Aristotle*, is of the same opinion, that *Homer* and *Strabo* be of, in two or thre places. περι. *Dionisius* in οικυμένης περιήγησι hath this verse. ὡτως οὐρανὸς περιδιδέσθω γαίαν ἅπασαν. So dooth the Ocean sea runne rounde about the worlde: speakyng only of *Europe*, *Africke*, and *Asie*, as then *Asie* was trauallyd & knowen. With these Doctoures may you ioyne *Pomponius Mela*, Cap. 2. lib. 1. *Plinius* lib. 2. Cap. 67. and *Pius*. 2. Cap. 2. in his description of *Asie*. All the whiche wryters do no lesse confirme the whole Easterne side of *Asie* to be compassed about with sea, then *Plato* doth affirme in *Timæo*, vnder the name *Atlantide*, the West Indies to be an Ilande, as in a speciall discourse thereof. *R. Eden* writeth, agreable vnto the sentence of *Proclus*, *Marsilius Ficinus*, and others. Out of *Plato* it is gathered that *America* is an Ilande. *Homer*, *Strabo*, *Aristotle*, *Dionisius*, *Mela*, *Plinie*, *Pius* 2. affirme the continent of *Asie*, *Afrike*, and *Europe*, to be environned with the Ocean. I may therefore boldly say, though later intelligences therof had we none at all, that *Asie* and the West Indies, be not tied together by any isthmus or stret of land, contrary to the opinion of some new Cosmographers, by whom doubtfully this matter hath been brought in controuersie. And thus muche for the first part of my answer vnto the fourth obiection.

The second part, namely that *America* & *Asie* cannot be one Lib. 2. continent, may thus be prooued. κατακτητης γῆς κοιλότητα *Melior.* ῥίι καὶ τοῦ ποταμῶν το πλῆθος. The most riuers take downe Cap. 1. that way their course, where the earth is most holowe & deepe.

Ph. ii.

wryteth

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



depth of the sea, sayth he in the same place, as it  
 goeth farther, so is it founde deeper. Into what goulphe do the  
 Polscouian ryuers *Onega, Duina, Oby, and Iba,* poure out their  
 streames? Northward out of *Mosconia* into the sea. Whi-  
 che way dooth that sea stryke? The South is mayne lande,  
 the Easterne coast wareth more and more shallowe: from the  
 North, ether naturally, because that part of the earth is higher  
*Aristot. 2. met. c. 1.* of necessitie, for that the forcible influence  
 of some Northerne Starres causeth the earth there to shake of  
 the sea, as some Philosophers do thynke: or finally for the great  
 slope of waters engendred in that frostie and cold clyme, that the  
 banckes are not able to holde them. *Alber. in 2. Meteo. Cap. 6.*  
 From the North I say, continually collect downe great abun-  
 dance of water. So that this Northeasterne current must at the  
 length abruptly bowe toward vs South on the Westt syde of  
*Fynmarke* and *Norwaye*: or els stryke downe Southwesterly about  
*Groneland*, or betwixt *Groneland* and *Iseland*. Into the Northwesterly  
 streit we speake of, as of congruence it doth, if you marke the  
 situation of that region, and by the report of *M. Furbisher*, ex-  
 perience teacheth vs. And *M. Furbisher* the further he trauel-  
 led in the former passage, as he tolde me, the deeper alwayes he  
 founde sea. Lay you now the sum hereof together. The riuers  
 runne where the Channels are most hollow, the sea in taking his  
 course wareth deeper, the sea waters fall continuallye from the  
 North Southward, the Northeasterne current striketh downe  
 into the streit we speake of, & is there augmented with whole  
 mountains of Ice & snow, falling downe furiously out from þe land  
 vnder þe North Pole. Where slope of water is, there is it a thing  
 impossible to want sea, where sea not only doth not want, but  
 wareth deeper, ther can be discovered no land. Finally, whence I  
 pray you came the contrary tyde, that *M. Furbisher* met withal  
 after that he had sayled no small way in that passage, if there be  
 any isthmus or streit of land betwixt the aforesaid Northwesterly  
 sterne gulfe and *Mar del Zur*, to sayne *Asia* and *America* togetha-  
 ther? That conclusion frequented in scholes *Quidquid preter &c.*  
 was ment of the partes of the worlde then knowne, and so is  
 it of ryghte to be vnderstoode.

*Plin. lib. 2.*  
*Cap. 67.*

Sol. 5.

The like objection requirerh for answer, wyldeome and pol-  
 licle,

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.





with, in the traualler, to win the Barbares favour by some good  
 meanes: and so to arme & strengthen him selfe, that when he shall  
 haue the repulse in one coast, he may safely traualle to an other,  
 commodiously taking his convenient times, & discreetly making  
 choise of them with whom he will thoroughly deale. To force a  
 violent entrie, would for vs Englishe men be very hard, consi-  
 dering the strength and valour of so great a nation, farre di-  
 stant from vs, and the attempt thereof might be most peril-  
 lous unto the voers, unless they part were verie good. Con-  
 sidering theyr lawes agaynst strangers, you shall reade ne-  
 verthelesse in the same relations of *Galcosto Perera*, that the *Ca-*  
*siban* kyng is wont to graunt free access vnto all forreiners  
 that trade into his countrey for marchandise, and a place of li-  
 bertie for them to remaine in: as the Popes had, buttill such time  
 as they had brought the *Louisa* of *Leutenant* of that coast to  
 be a circumcised *Maracene*: wherefore some of them were put  
 to the sword, the rest were scattered abrode: at *Fugiden*, a great  
 citie in *China*, certayne of them are yet this day to be seen. As  
 for the *Giapan*, they be most desirous to be acquainted with  
 strangers. The *Portugals* though they were straightly hand-  
 led there at the first, yet in the ende they founde great fauoure at  
 the prince his hands, insomuch that the *Louisa* of president that  
 mistreated them, was therefore put to death. The riuers *Tan* *Ca-*  
*ma* haileth that seas, the *Portugalles*, the *Maracenes*, & *Popes*  
 traueled continually vp & downe that reache from *Giapan* to *Chi-*  
*na*, from *China* to *Malacca*, from *Malacca* to the *Moluccas*: and  
 that an Englishman, better appointed then any of them at (that I  
 say no more of our name) seare to saile in that Ocean: What seas  
 at al doo want piracie? what navigation is there boyde of perill?  
 To the last argument. Our traueyers neede not to let the their  
 returne by the northeast, ne shall they be constrained, except

Sal. 6.

By the the

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Luc. lib. 1.  
Phar. sal.

What the  
easterne cur-  
rant is.

The worlde, or no? for learned men do diuersely handle that question. The naturall course of all waters is downeward, whereof of congruence they fall that way where they fynde the earth most low and deepe: in respecte whereof, it was erst sayde, the seas to strike from the Northern landes Southerly. Violently the seas are tossed and troubled diuerse wayes with the wyndes, encreased and diminished by the course of the Moone, hopped by and downe through the sundrye operations of the Sonne and the Starres: finally some be of opinion, that the seas be carried in part violently about þe worlde after the daily motion of the highest mouable heauen, in lyke maner as þe elementes of ayre and fyre, with the rest of the heauenly spheres are, from the east vnto the west. And this they do call theyr easterne currant, or leuant streame. Some suche currant may not be denied to be of great force in the hote Zone, for the nearnes thereof vnto the centre of the Sonne and blustryng easterne wyndes violently dpyuing the seas westwarde: howbeit in the temperate climes, the Sonne beyng farther of, and the wyndes moze diuerse, blowyng as muche from the north, the west, and south, as from the east, this rule doth not effectually withholde vs from traueyllyng eastwarde, ne be we kepte euer backe by the aforesayde Leuante wyndes and streame. But in *Magellane* streict we are violently driuen backe westwarde: Ergo through the Northern streictes or *Anian* fret shall we not be able to returne eastwarde: it foloweth not. The first, for that the northwestern streict hath moze sea room at the least by one hundred Englyshe myles, then *Magellane* fret hath, the onely want whereof causeth all narrowe passages generally to be most violent. So woulde I say in *Anian* gulfe, if it were so narrowe as *Don Diego* and *Zalcerius* haue paynted it out, any returne that way to be full of difficulties, in respect of such streictnes therof, not for the nearnes of the Sonne, or easterne wyndes, violently forcing that way any leuant streame. But in that place there is moze sea room by many degrees, if the cardes of *Cabota*, and *Gemma Frisius*, and that whiche *Tramezine* imprinted, be true.

And hether to reason see I none at all, but that I may as well geue credyt vnto theyr doynge, as to any of the rest. It must be *Peregrinations historia*, that is, true reportes of skillful trauallers,

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



as *Proleme* writeth, that in suche controuersies of *Geographie* must put vs out of doubt. *Ortelius* in his vniuersall tables, in *Lib. 1. Geog.* his particuler *Happes* of the west *Indies*, of all *Asia*, of the *Cap. 2.* northen kyngdomes, of the east *Indies*, *Mercator* in some of his globes, and generall mappes of the worlde, *Moletius* in his vniuersall table of the *Globe* diuided, in his sea carde, and particuler tables of the *East Indies*, *Zalcius*, and *Don Diego*, with *Fernando Bertely*, and others, do so much dyffer both from *Gemma Frisius* and *Cabota*, among them selues, & in diuers places from them selues, concerning the diuers situation and sundry limites of *America*, that one may not so rashly, as truely surmise, these men either to be ignorant in those pointes touching the aforesayd region, or that the mappes they haue geuen out vnto the worlde, were collected only by them. & neuer of their owne drawing. *M. Furbishers* prosperous voyage, and happy returne, wyl absolutely decide these controuersies, and certainly determine where the whole passage lieth, how long it is, what breadth it carrieth, how perillous, how prosperous the forney is, and what commodities the paynfull traualer can reape thereby. What gaine the venterous marchant may looke for, what wealth, what honour, what fame wyl to our *Englyshe* nation thereof ensue.

Thus muche, right honorable, my verpe good *Lady*, of your question concerning your seruantes voyage. If not so skilfully as I woulde, and was desirous fully to do, at the least as I coulde, & leasure suffered me, for the litle knowledge God hath lent me, yf it be any at all, in *Cosmographie* and *Philosophie*. and the small experyence I haue in traualle. Chosyn rather in the cleare iudgement of your *Ho.* mynde to appeare rude and ignorant, and so to be seene vnto the multitude, then to be founde vntankefull and carelesse in any thing your *Ho.* shoulde commaunde me. God preserve your Honour. At the Court the .xx. of *Marche*.

Your *Ho.* most humbly at  
commaundement.

*Richard Willes.*

(.)

*H. iii.*

To the

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



# To the right wor- shipfull, my singuler good

Mystres, M. Elizabeth  
Morisyn.



**O**ur Indian readings, our Asian lectures, our  
Geographical description of the whole world,  
will I end with certayne reportes of the pro-  
uince China in Cathayo, and some intelli-  
gences of the worthy Islands lying therby in  
the East Ocean. The relation whereof,  
though at the first myght seeme briefly to be  
passed ouer, and in a fewe substantiall poyntes only to be touched,  
as in the rest of our discourses concernyng this facultie we haue  
done: Let the worthynesse of matter herein conteyned, the order of ci-  
uile gouernment, the maners & fashions of the inhabitants, the dis-  
cription of that countrey, so wel gathered the noueltie thereof in our  
language, haue effectually moued me to doo the whole discourse into  
Englysh. Noedlesse I graunt the labour is for you, that perfectly in so  
fewe Monethes, so fewe weekes, so fewe dayes, learned the Italian  
tongue, out of the whiche language this translation is made. The  
singular care you euer haue had of my well dooing, and the  
speciall fauour I haue founde among your Honorable frendes for  
your sake, woulde not only not let me to play the negligent Poete in  
the first Act, but compelled me to handle euen the last Scene more a-  
bundantly: as wel to acknowledge your good skill both in Cosmogra-  
phie, and in forreine languages, as also to testifie vnto the world, the  
great benefites the whiche I haue receyued for vsbering, as it were  
herein, so good, so wyse, so vertuous, so worshipfull a mystres.  
Nowe after all these learned exercises of your younger yeeres, God  
Almyghtie send you great good sucresse in your present affaires,  
with increase of prosperitie and muche honour.

as you dayly shall grow elder

At London the 21. of February. 1576.

Your seruaunt euer.

R. Willes.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





Certayne reportes of the prouince *China*, learned through the Portugalles there imprisoned, and chiefly by the relation of *Galeotto Perera*, a gentleman of good credit, that lay prisoner in that countrey many yeeres. Done out of Italian into Englyshe, by

R. W.

Harleian. Dec. 2 Vol. 2. Page 64.



This land of *China* is parted into 13. *Syres*, the which sometymes were eche one a kyngdome by it selfe, but these many yeeres they haue been all subiect vnto one Kyng. *Fuquien* *Fuquien*. is made by the Portugalles the first *Syre*, bycause there their troubles began, and had occasion thereby to know the rest. In this *Syre* be viii. cities, but one principally more famous than others, called *Fuquien*. the other seuen are reasonably great, the best knownen wherof vnto the Portugalles is *Cincoo*. in respect of a certayne haven *Cincoo*. topning therunto, whither in tyme past they were wont for merchandise to resorte.

*Canton* is the second *Syre*, not so great in quantitie, as well *Canton*. accounted of, both by the Kyng thereof, and also by the Portugalles, for that it lyeth nearer vnto *Malacca* than any other part of *China*. and was first discryed by the Portugalles before any other *Syre* in that prouince: this *Syre* hath in it seuen cities.

*Chequeam* is the thirde *Syre*, the chiefest cite therein is *Dou-* *Chequeam*. *ebion*, therein also standeth *Liampo*, with other thirtene or fouertiene Boroughes: countrey townes therein to to many to be spoken of.

The fourth *Syre* is called *Xutiansu*, the principall cite ther- *Xutiansu*. of is great *Pachin*, where the Kyng is alwayes resident. In it are fiftiene other very great cities: of other townes therein, and Boroughes well walled and trenched about, I will say nothing.

The fyfth *Syre* hath name *Cbelim*: the great cite *Nanquin*. *Cbelim*. chiefest of other fiftiene cities was herein of auncient tyme, the

topall

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



royall seate of the *Chinise* kynges . From this tityle, and from that aforesayde *Chouquam* forwarde, bare rule the other kynges, vntyll the whole region became one kyngdome.

*Quianci.*  
rather *Quinzi*

The first tityle beareth name *Quianci*, as also the principall cite thereof, wherein the fine claye to make vesselles is wrought. The *Portugalles* being ignorant of this countrey, and syndyng great aboundaunce of that fine claye to be solde at *Liampo*, and that very good cheape, thought at the first that it had ben made there, howbeit in fine, they perceiued that the standing of *Quinzi* moze neare vnto *Liampo* than to *Cinco* or *Cantan*, was the cause of so muche fine claye at *Liampo*: within the compasse of *Quinzi* tityle be other . 12. cities.

The seuenth tityle is *Quicin*, the eight *Quansi*, the nienth *Confu*, the tenth *Vrnan*, the eleuenth *Sichina*. In the first hereof there be . 16. cities, in the next titylene: howe many townes the other three haue, we are ignorant as yet, as also of the proper names of the . 12. and . 13. tityles, and the townes therein.

This finally may be generally sayde heereof, that the greater tityles in *China* prouince, may be compared with mightie kyngdomes.

In eche one of these tityles be set *Ponchiassini* and *Anchiasini*, befoze whom are handled the matters of other cities. There is also placed in eche one a *Tuan*, as you would say a gouernor, and a *Chian*, that is a visiter, as it were: whose office is to goe in circuit, and to see iustice exactly done . By these meanes so vpryghtly thinges are ordered there, that it may bee worthely accounted one of the best gouerned prouinces in all the world.

*Pachin.al.*  
*Pachang.*

The Kyng maketh alwayes his abode in the great cite *Pachin*, as muche to say in our language as by the name thereof I am aduertised, the towne of the kyngdome . This kyngdome is so large, that vnder syue monethes you are not able to traueyle from the townes by the sea syde to the Court and backe agayne, no not vnder thre monethes in poste at your vrgent busynesse . The posthoyses in this countrey are litle of bodie, but swyfte of foote . Many doe traueyle the greater parte of this iourney by water in certayne lyght barkes, for the multitude of ryuers commodious for passage from one cite to another.

The



The kyng, notwithstanding the hugeness of his kyngdome, hath such a care thereof, that every Poone (by the Poones they reckon their monethes) he is aduertised fully of whatsoeuer thing happeneth therein, by these meanes folowynge.

The whole prouince being diuided into syles, and eche syle hauing in it one chiefe and principall citie, wherunto the matters of all the other cities, townes, and Boroughes, are brought: there are drawen, in every chiefe citie aforesayde, intelligences of suche thinges as doe monethly fall out, and be sent in writing to the Court. If happely in one moneth euery post is not able to goe so long a way, yet doeth there notwithstanding once euery moneth arryue one poste out of the syle. Who so cometh before the newe Poone, stayeth for the deliuey of his letters vntyll the Poone be chaunged. Then lykewyse are dispatched other postes, backe into all the .13. syles agayne.

Before that we doe come to *Cinco* we haue to passe through many places, and some of great importance. For this countrey is so well inhabited neare the sea syde, that you can not go one myle but you shall see some towne, Borough, or Postry, the which are so abundantly prouided of all thinges, that in the cities & townes they liue ciuilly. Neuertheles such as dwell abrode are very pooze, for the multitude of them euery where so great, that out of a tree you shall see many tymes swarme a number of chyldren, where a man would not haue thought to haue founde any one at all.

From these places in number infinite, you shall come vnto two cities very populose, and being compared with *Cinco*, not possibly to be discerned which is the greater of them. These cities are as well walled as any cities in all the worlde. As you come in to eyther of them, standeth so great and mightie a bydge, that the lyke thereof I haue neuer scene in Portugall nor els where. I heard one of my felowes say, that he told in one bydge .40. arches. The occasion wherfore these bydges are made so great, is for that the countrey is toward the sea very plaine and low, & ouerwhelmed euer as the sea water encreaseeth. The breadth of the bydges, although it bee well proportioned vnto the length thereof, yet are they equally buylt, no higher in the middle than at eyther end, in such wyse that you may directly see from the one end to the other, the sydes are wonderfully well engraued after the  
manner



manner of Rome workes. But that wee did most maruyle at, was therewithall the hugeness of þ stones, the lyke wherof as we came in to the cite, we dyd see many set by in places inhabited by the way, to no small charges of theys, howbeit to litle purpose, whereas no body seeth them but such as doe come bye. The arches are not made after our fashion, haunted with sundry stones set togeather: but paved, as it were, whole stones reaching from one pillar to an other, in suche wyse that they lye both for the arches heaves, and galantly serue also for the hygh waye. I haue been assumed to beholde the hugeness of these aforesayde stones, some of them are .xii. pases long and wywarde, the least a .xi. good pases long, and an halfe.

The wayes eche where are galantly paved with fouresquare stone, except it be where for want of stone they use to laye bycker: in this voyage wee traueyled ouer certayne hilles, wher the wayes were pitched, and in many places no wyse paved than in the playne grounde. This causeth vs to thinke, that in all the worlde there be no better workemen for buildinges, than the inhabitants of *China*.

The countrey is so well inhabited, that no one foote of ground is left vntilled: small stoz of cattell haue we seene this way, we sawe onely certayne Oxen wherewithall the countrymen doe plough theyr grounde. One Oxe draweth the plough alone, not onely in this shyre, but in other places also, wher in is greater stoz of cattell. These countrymen by arte doe that in tyllage, which we are constrained to doe by force. Here be solde the vopdinges of close stooles, although there wanteth not the dung of beastes: & the excrements of man are good marchandise throughout all *China*. The dungfarmers seeke in euery streete by exchange to buye this vurtie ware for hearbes and wooth. The custome is very good for keeppyng the cite cleane. There is great abundance of Venmes, Geese, Duckes, Swyne, and Goates, Wherers haue they none: the Venmes are solde by weight, and so are all other thinges. Two pounde of Venmes fleshe, Goose, or Ducke, is woorth two *Ʒ* of their money, that is, d. ob. sterling. Swines fleshe is solde at a peny the pounde. Beefe beareth the same pryce, for the scarcitie thereof, howbeit Northwarde from *Fuquier*, & farther off from the sea coast, there is Beefe more plente,





tie and sold better cheape, Beefe onely excepted, great aboundance of all other viandes we haue had in all the cities we passed through. And if this countrey were lyke vnto India, the inhabitants whereof eate neyther Henne, beefe, nor porke, but keepe that onely for the Portugalles and Moores, they would be solde here for nothyng. But it so fallynge out, that the *Chineans* are the greatest eaters in all the world, they doe feede vppon all thynges, specially on porke, the fatter that is, vnto them the lesse lothsome. The highest pryce of these thynges aforesayde, I haue set downe, better cheape shall you sometymes buye them for the great plenty thereof in this countrey. Frogges are solde at the same pryce that is made of Hennes, and are good meate amongst them, as also Dogges, Cattes, Rattes, Snakes, and all other vncleane meates.

The cities be very gallant, specially neare vnto the gates, the which are marueylously great, & couered with Iron. The gate-houses buylt on hygh with Towers, the lower parte thereof, is made of brycke and stone, proportionally wiche the walles, from the walles vppward, the buyldynge is of tymber, and many stoyes in it one aboue the other. The strength of theyr townes is in the mightie walles and ditches, artillerie haue they none.

The streetes in *Cinco*, and in all the rest of the cities we haue seene are very saye, so large and so streight, that it is wonderfull to beholde. Theyr houses are buylt with tymber, the foundati- ons onely excepted, the which are layde with stone, in eche syde of the streetes are paynteles or continuall porches for the marchantes to walke vnder: the breadth of the streete is neuerthelesse suche, that in them .xv. men may ryde commodiously syde by syde. As they ryde they must needes passe vnder many hygh arches of triumph that crosse ouer the streetes made of tymber, and carued diuersely, couered with tyle of fine claye: vnder these arches the Mercers doe vtter theyr smaller wares, and such as lyst to stande there, are defended from rayne and the heate of the Sunne. The greater gentlemen haue these arches at their doores: although some of them be not so myghtyly buylt as the rest.

I shall haue occasion to speake of a certayne order of gentlemen that are called *Lontea*. I will first therefore expounde what this worde signifyeth. *Lontea* is as muche to say in our language

*Lontea*

as

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.

Faint, illegible text at the top of the page, possibly a header or introductory paragraph.

Main body of faint, illegible text, appearing to be several paragraphs of a document.

Faint text at the bottom of the page, possibly a signature or footer.

as *Syr*, and whan any of them calleth his name, he wereth *Syr*: and as we doe say, that the kyng hath made *gentle man*, so say they, that there is made a *Loucea*. And for that amongst them the degrees are diuers both in name and office, I will tell you onely of some principalles, beyng not able to aduertise you of all.

The maner howe gentlemen are created *Louceas*, and doe come to that honour and title, is by the gpyng of a broad gyrdle not like to the rest, & a cap, at the commaundement of the kyng. The name *Loucea* is moze generall and common vnto moe, than equalitie of honour therby signified, agreeth withall. Such *Louceas* that doe serue their pynce in weightie matters for iustice, are created after triall made of their learning: but the other whiche serue in smaller affayres, as *Capitaynes*, *Constables*, *Sergeantes* by lande and sea, *Recepuers*, and such lyke, wherof there be in every cite, as also in this, very many, are made for sauour: the chiefe *Louceas* are serued kneelyng.

The whole prouince *China* is diuided, as I haue sayde, into thirtiene *shyes*, in every *shye* at the least is one gouernour called there *Tutan*, in some *shyes* there be two.

*Chian, al.*  
*Chien.*

Chiefe in office nexte vnto them be certayne other named *Chians*, that is, bygh Commissioners as you would say, or visiters, with full aucthoritie in suche wyse, that they doe call vnto an accompt the *Tutans* them selues, but their aucthoritie lasteth not in any *shye* longer than one yeere. Neuerthelesse in every *shye* beyng at the least seuen cities, yea, in some of them fiftiene or sixtiene, beside other *Boroughes* & *townes* not well to be numbred, these visiters, where they come, are so honoured and feared, as though they were some great pynces. At the yeeres ende their circuit done, they come vnto that cite which is chiefe of others in the *shye*, to doe iustice there: finally busying them selues in the searching out of such as are to receyue the order of *Louceas*, wherof moze shall be sayde in an other place.

*Ponchiassi.*

ouer and besydes these officers, in the chiefe cite of eche one of these aforesayde thirtiene prouinces, is resident one *Ponchiassi*, *Capitayne* thereof, and *Treasurer* of all the kynges reuenues. This *Pagistrate* maketh his abode in one of the foure greatest



best houses that be in all these head cities. And although the principall parte of his function be, to be Captayne, to be Treasurer of the reuenues in that prouince, to sende these reuenues at appoynted tymes to the Court: yet hath he notwithstanding by his office also to meddle with matters apperteynyng vnto iustyce.

In the seconde great house dwelleth an other Magistrate called *Anchiasii*, a great officer also, for he hath dealynges in all matters of iustice. Who although hee be somewhat inferior in dignitie vnto the *Ponchiasii*, yet for his great dealynges and generall charge of iustice, whosoever seeth the assayes of the one house and the other, myght iudge this *Anchiasii* to be the greater.

*Anchiasii.*  
*al. Hexasi.*

*Tuzi*, an other officer so called, lyeth in the thyrd house, a magistrate of impoortance, specially in thinges belongyng vnto warfare, for thereof hath he charge.

*Tuzi.*

There is resident in the fourth house a fourth officer, bearyng name *Taiissu*. In this house is the principall pylson of all the citie. Eche one of these Magistrates aforesayde may both laye e- upll doers in pylson, and deliuer them out agayne, except the facte be heynous and of impoortance: in suche a case they can doe nothing, except they doe meete altogether. And if the deede deserue death, all they together can not determine thereof, without recourse made vnto the *Chian* wheresoever he be, or to the *Tuan*: and if it falleth out, that the case be referred vnto hygher power. In all cities, not onely chiefe in eche tynne, but in the rest also, are meanes founde to make *Loureas*: Many of them doe studie at the prince his charges, wherfore at the peeres ende they resort vnto the head cities, whyther the *Chians* doe come, as it hath beene earst sayde, as well to gyue these degrees, as to sit in iudgement ouer the pylsoners.

*Taiissu.*

The *Chians* goe in circuit euery peere, but suche as are to be chosen to the greatest offices, meete not but from three peeres to three peeres, and that in certayne large halles appoynted for them to be examined in. Many thynge are asked them, wher- vnto if they doe answer accordingly, and be found sufficient to take their degree, the *Chian* by and by graunteth it them: wher- the *Cappe* & gyrdle wherby they are knowen to be *Loureas*, they were

*Licentiates.*

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Doctors.

Dutch lphs.

weare not before that they be confirmed by the kyng. They examina-  
tion done, and tryall made of them, such as haue taken their  
degree wont to be giuen them with all ceremonies, vse to banquet  
and feast many dayes together (as the *Chineans* fashion is to end  
all their pleasures with eatyng and drynkyng) and so remayne  
chosen to doe the kyng seruice in matters of learnyng. The o-  
ther examynates founde insufficient to proceede, are sent backe to  
their studie agayne. Whose ignorance is perceiued to come of  
negligence & default, such a one is whipped, and sometymes sent  
to pylson, where wee lyeing that yere whan this kynde of acte  
was, we found many thus punished, and demaundyng the cause  
therof, they sayde it was for that they knew not howe to ans were  
vnto certayne thinges asked them. It is a woerde to see howe  
these *Loutcas* are serued and feared, in suche wise, that in publyke  
assemblies at one shyfte they gyue, all the seruitors belongyng  
vnto iustice, tremble thereat. At their being in these places, whan  
they lyst to moue, be it but euen to the gate, these seruitors do take  
them by, and carry them in seates of beaten golde. After this sort  
are they bozne whan they goe in the citie, eyther for their owne  
businessse abroad, or to see eche other at home. For the dignitie  
they haue, and office they doe beare, they be al accompanied: the  
very meaneest of them all that goeth in these seates is vthered by  
two men at the least, that cry vnto the people to gyue place, how-  
beit, they neede it not, for that reuerence the common people hath  
vnto them. They haue also in theyr company certayne Serge-  
antes, with their *Haces* eyther siluered, or altogether siluer,  
some two, some foure, other six, other eight, conueniently for eche  
one his degree. The moze princypall and chiefe *Loutcas* haue go-  
ing orderly before these Sergeantes, many other with stauces,  
and a great many catchpoules with roddees of *Indische* canes,  
dragged on the grounde, so that the streetes beyng paved, you  
may heare a sarre of as well the noyse of the roddees, as the voyce  
of the cryers. These felowes serue also to apprehende others, and  
the better to be knowen they weare livery redde girdles, and in  
their cappes *Petrocks* feathers. Behynde these *Loutcas* come  
such as doe beare certayne tables hanged at stauces endes, where-  
in is writen in siluer letters the name, degree, and office of that  
*Loutca*. whom they folowe. In lyke maner they haue bozne after  
them

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





them hattes agreeable vnto theyr tydes: if the *Loues* be meane, then hath he brought after hym but one batte, and that may not be yealow: but if he be of the better sorte, then may he haue two, thre, or foure: the principall and chiefe *Loues*, may haue all theyr hattes yealow, the which among them is accounted great honour. The *Loues* for warres, although he be but meane, may notwithstanding haue yealow hattes. The *Tutanes* and *Chians*, when they goe abroad, haue besides all this before them ledde .3. or .4. horses with theyr garde in armoz. Furthermoze the *Loues*, yea and all the people of *China*, are woonte to eat theyr meate syttyng on stooles at hygh tables as we do, and that very cleanly, although they vse neither table clothes nor napkyns. Whatsoeuer is set downe vppon the boorde, is first carued, before that it be brought in: they seeke with two slyckes, refraynyng from touchyng theyr meate with theyr handes, euen as we do with forkes, for þ which respect, they lesse do nerde any table clothes. As is the nation onely ciuil at meate, but also in conuersation, and in courtesie they seeme to exceede all other. Liketwile in theyr dealynges, after their maner, they are so ready, that they farre passe all other Gentyles and Poones: the greater states are so bayne, that they lyne theyr clothes with the best syke that may be founde. The *Loues*, are an idle generation, without all maner of exercises and pastymes, excepte it be eatyng and drynkynge. Somtymes they walke abroad in the feldes, to make the souldyars shoot at pyckes with theyr bowes, but theyr eatyng passeth: they wyll stande eatyng euen when the other do drawe to shoote. The pycke is a great blanket spread on certayne long poles, he that slyketh it, hath of the best man there standyng a peece of crymson cassata, the whiche is hnye about his head: in this sorte the wyrmers honoured, and the *Loues* with theyr bellies full, retorne home agayne. The inhabitants of *China*, be very great Idolaters, all generally do wooshypp the heauens: and as we are woont to saye, God knoweth it: so saye they at euery worde, *Tien Tauter*, that is to saye, The heauens do knowe it. Some do wooshypp the Sonne, and some the Moone, as they thynke good, for none are bounde moze to one then to an other. In their temples, the which they do cal *Mians*, they haue a great altar in þ same place

the, that is  
the Italians  
and Spanis  
ardes.

¶ i.

as

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



After the  
Dutch nation.

Michigorian  
Iph.

As we haue, true it is that one may goe rounde about it: There  
set they vp the Image of a certayne Louisa of that countrey,  
whom they haue in great reuerence for certaine notable thinges  
he dyd. At the ryght hande standeth the deuyl, muche more vglye  
paynted then we do vse to set hym out, wherunto great homage  
is done by suche as come into the temple to aske counsell, or to  
drawe lottes: this opinion they haue of hym, that he is malicious  
and able to do euyl. If you aske them what they do thynke of the  
soules departed, they wil answer, that they be immortall, and  
that as soone as any one departeth out of this life, he becommeth  
a deuyl if he haue liued well in this worlde, if ocherwylse, that  
the same deuyl chaungeth hym into a bulle, ope, or dogge. Wher-  
fore to this deuyl do they muche honour, to hym do they sacrifice,  
praying hym that he wyl make them lyke vnto hym selfe, and  
not lyke other beastes. They haue mozeouer an other sorte of  
temples, wherein both bypon the altars and also on the walles  
do stande many Idoles well proportioned, but bare headed:  
These beare name *Omitboson*, accompted of them spirites, but  
suche as in heauen do nether good nor euyl, thought to be  
suche men and women, as haue chastlye lpyed in this worlde  
in abstinence from fysh and fleshe, fedde only with ryle & salates.  
Of that deuyl they make some accompte, for these spirites they  
care litle or nothyng at all. Agayne they holde opinion that if  
a man do well in this lyfe, the heauens wyl geue hym many  
tempozall blessinges, but if he do euyl, then shall he haue infirmi-  
ties, diseases, troubles, and penurie, and all this without  
any knowledge of God. Finally, this people knoweth no other  
thing then to liue & die, yet because they be reasonable creatures,  
al seemed good vnto them we spake in our language, though it  
were not very sufficient: our maner of praying especially pleased  
them; and truly they are wel ynough disposed to receiue the  
knowledge of the trueth. Our lord graunte for his mercie all  
thynges so to be disposed, that it may some tyme be brought to  
passe, that so great a nation as this is, petythe not for wante of  
helpe.

Our maner of praying so well lyken them, that in  
pyson unpropozunately they besoughte vs to wyte for them  
some



Some what as concerning heauen, the whiche we byd to theyr contentacion with suche reasons as we knewe, howbeit not very cunninggly. As they do theyr Idolatry they laugh at them selues. If at any tyme this countrey myght be ioined in league with the kynngdome of Portugale, in such wyse that free accesse were had to deale with the people there, they might al be soone conuerted. The greatest fault we do fynd in them is Sodomitie, a vice very common in the meaner sort, & nothing strange amongst the best. This sinne were it left of them, in all other thynges so well disposed they be, that a good interpretour in a short space myght do there great good, yf, as I sayde, the countrey were ioined in league with vs.

Furthermoze the *Louteas*, with al the people of *China*, are wont to solemnize the dayes of the newe and full Moones in disling one eache other, and makyng great bankettes, for to that end, as I earst sayd, do tend all theyr pastymes, and spendyng theyr daies in pleasure. They are wont also to solemnize eache one his byrth daye, whereunto theyr kynred and frendes do resorte of custome, with presentes of Iuelles or money, receyuyng a gayne for theyr rewarde good cheare. They keepe in lyke maner a general feast with great bankets that day theyr kyng was bozne. But theyr most principall and greatest feast of al, and best cheare, is the fyrst day of theyr newe yeere, namely the fyrst day of the newe Moone of Februarve, so that theyr fyrst moneth is Marche, and they reckon the tymes accordynglye, respect beyng had vnto the reigne of theyr Prynces: as when anye deede is wypten, they date it thus, Hade suche a daye of suche a Moone, and such a yeere of the reigne of suche a Kyng. And theyr auncient wyptynges beare date of the yeeres of this or that Kyng.

Nowe wyll I speake of the maner the whiche the *Chineans* doo obserue in dooyng Justice, that it maye be knowen how farre these Gentyles doo herein exceede manye *Christians*, that be moze bounden then they to deale iustly and in trueth. Because the *Chynise* Kyng maketh his abode continually in the Citie *Pachyn*, his kyngdome so great, the shyes so many, as tofore it hath been sayde, in it therefore the Governours and Rulers, muche lyke vnto our *Schryffes*, be so appoynted

II.ii. soderly,



lodenty and speedely discharged agayne, that they haue no tyme to growe naught. Furthermoze to keepe the state in moze securitie, the *Loureas* that gouerne one tynne, are chosen out of some other tynne distantt farre of, where they must leaue theyr wyues, chyldren, and goodes, carryng nothyng with them but them selues. True it is, that at theyr commyng thither they do fynde in a readinesse all thynges necessarie, theyr house, furniture, seruantes, and all other thynges in suche perfection and plenty, that they want nothyng. Thus the kyng is well serued without all feare of treason.

In the principall cities of the tynnes be foure cheefe *Loureas*, before whom are brought all matters of the inferiour townes, throughtout the whole realme. Diuers other *Loureas* haue the maneagynge of iustice, and recepyng of rentes, bounde to peche an accompte thereof vnto the greater officers. Other doo see that there be no euill rule kept in the cite: eache one as it becometh hym. Generally al these do imppryson malefactours, cause them to be whynned & racked, hoping them by & done by the armes with a corde, a thyng very vsuall there, and accompted no shame. These *Loureas* do vse great diligence in þ apprehending of theues, so that it is a wonder to see a theefe scape away in any towne, cite, or vilage. Upon the sea neere vnto the tynne many are taken, and looke euen as they are taken, so be they first whynned, and afterward layd in pryson, where shortly after they all dye for hunger and colde. At that tyme, when we were in pryson, there died of them about threescore and ten. If happely any one, hauyng the meanes to great foode, do escape, he is set with the condemned persones, and prouided for as they be by the kyng, in such wyse as hereafter it shalbe sayde.

Theyr whynns be certayne peeces of canes, cleft in the middle, in such sort that they seeme rather playne then sharpe. He that is to be whynned lieth grouelong on the ground. Upon his thigges the Hangman layeth on blowes myghtely with these canes, that the standers by tremble at theyr crueltie. Ten stryppes make a great dzale of blood, twentie or thyrtye spople the fleshe altogether, fytie or threescore wyll require long tyme to be healed, and if they come to the number of one hundred, then are they incurable.

The

The Italians  
call it the *Stras-  
pado*.





The *Louteas* obserue mozeouer this: when any man is brought before them to be examined, they aske hym openly in the hearing of as many as be present, be þe offence neuer so great. Thus did they also behaue them selues with vs. For this cause amongst them can there be no false witness, as dayly amongst vs it falleth out. This good commeth therof, that many being alwaies about the iudge to heare the euidence, and beare witness, the processe can not be falsified, as it happeneth sometymes with vs. The *Portes*, *Gentiles*, & *Iewes*, haue al their sundry othes, þe *Portes* doo sweare by theyr *Mosafos*, the *Brachmans* by theyr *Fili*, the rest like wise by the thynges they do worthyppe. The *Chineans* though they be wonte to sweare by heauen, by the *Moone*, by the *Sunne*, and by all theyr *Idolles*, in iudgement neuertheless they sweare not at all. If for some offence an othe be vled of any one, by and by with the least euidence he is tormented, so be the wytnesses he bypneteth, if they tell not the truth, or do in any poynt disagree, except they be men of worthyppe and credyte, who are beleued without any farther matter: the rest are made to confesse the trueth by force of tormentes and whyppes. Besides this order obserued of them in examinations, they do feare so muche theyr kyng, and he where he maketh his abode kepeth them so lowe, that they dare not once styre. Agayne, these *Louteas* as great as they be, notwithstanding the multitude of *Notaries* they haue, not trusting any others, do write al great processe and matters of importance them selues. Mozeouer one vertue they haue worthy of great prayse, and that is, being men so well regarded and accompted of as though they were princes, they be patient about measure in geuyng audience. The poore straungers brought before them myght saye what we woulde, as all to be lyes and salaces that they dyd wyte, ne dyd we stande before them with the vsuall ceremonies of that countrey, yet dyd they beare with vs so patiently, that they caused vs to wonder, knowyng specially howe litle any aduocate or iudge is wonte in our countrey to beare with vs. For where so euer in any towne of *Christendome* shoulde be accused vnknewen men as we were, I knowe not what ende the very innocentes cause woulde haue: but we in a *Heathen* countrey, hauyng our great ennimies two of the chiefest men in a whole towne,

¶ i. iiii.

towne,

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



tolme, wnting an interpreter, ignorant of that countrey language, byd in the ende see our great aduersaryes cast into pylson for our sake, and deprivied of theyr offices and honoure for not doyng iustice, yea not to escape death, for as the rumoz goeth, they shalbe beheaded. Somewhat is nowe to be sayde of the lawes that I haue been habile to knowe in this countrey, and fyrst, no thefte or murder, is at any tyme pardoned: adulterers are put in pylson, and the facte once proued, condemned to dye, the womans husbände must accuse them: this order is keapt with men and women found in that fault, but thecues and murderers are imprisoned as I haue sayd, where they shortly dye for hunger and colde. If any one happely escape by bypyng the gayler to geue hym meate, his procelle goeth farther, and cometh to the courte where he is condemned to dye. Sentence byng geuen, the pylsoner is brought in publyke with a terrible bande of men that laye hym in Irons hande and foote, with a boorde at his necke one handefull broade, in length reachyng downe to his knees, cleft in two partes, and with a hole one handefull downewarde in the table fyr for his necke, the whiche they enclose by therein, naylyng the boorde fast togeather. one handefull of the boorde standeth by behynde in the necke: the sentence and cause wherefoze the fesson was condemned to dye, is wyten in that parte of the table that standeth befoze.

A pylsoner  
boorde.

This certimonie ended, he is laid in a great prison in the companie of some other condemned persons, the which are found by the king as long as they do liue. The boord aforesaid so made, tormenteth the pylsoners very much, keeping them both from rest, & eke lettyng them to eate comunodly, theyr handes beyng manced in Irons under that boord, so þ in fine there is no remedy but death. In þ chiefe cittes of egypt, where, as we haue erst said, there be foure principlal houses, in ech of them a prison: but in one of them where the *Taisu* maketh his abode, there is a greater & a moze principlal prison thē in any of þ rest: although in euery citie there be many, neuerthelesse in thre of them remaine onely such as be condemned to die. Their death is much prolonged, for that ordinarily there is no execution doone but once a yeere, though many die for hunger and colde, as we haue seene in this prison. Execution is done in this maner. The *Cbian*, so wpt the  
high



hygh commissioner of Lozd cheefe Justice, at the yeeres ende goeth to the head citie, where he heareth agayne the causes of suche as be condemned. Many tymes he deliuereth some of them, declaring that boord to haue been wrongfully put about theyr neckes: the visitation ended, he chooseth out seuen or .viii. not many more or lesse, of the greatest malefactours, the whiche, to feare and keepe in awe the people, are brought into a great market place, where al the great *Louteas* meete together, and after many ceremonies and superstitions, as the vse of the countrey is, are beheaded. This is done once a yeere: who so escapeth that day, may be sure that he shal not be put to death al that yeere folowynge, & so remayneth at the kynges charges in the greater pylson. In that pylson where we lay were al waies one hundred & moe of these condemned persons, besides them that lay in other pylsons.

These pylsons wherin the condemned captiues do remayne are so strong, that it hath not been hard, that any pylsoner in al *China* hath escaped out of pylson, soz in deed it is a thyng impossible. The pylsons are thus builded. First al the place is myghtely walled about, the walles be very strong and hygh, the gate of no lesse force: within it thre other gates, before you come where the pylsoners do lye, there many great lodgings are to be seene of the *Louteas*, *Notaries*, *Partitions*, that is, such as do there keepe watch and ward day and nyght, the court large and paved; on the one syde wherof standeth a pylson, with two nyghtie gates, wherin are kepte such pylsoners as haue committed enozmious offences. This pylson is so great, that in it are *Streates* and *Market places* wherein al thyngs necessarie are sold. Vea some pylsoners liue by that kynde of trade, buyeng and selling, and lettynge out beds to hyre: some are dayly sent to pylson, some dayly deliuered, wherfoze this place is neuer boyde of seuen or eyght hundred men that go at libertie.

Into one other pylson of condemned persons shal you goe at thre yron gates, the court paved and vaulted rounde about, & open aboue as it were a cloister. In this cloister be eight roomes with yron doores, and in eache of them a large Gallerie, wher in euery night the pylsoners do lie at length, their seete in the stocks, theyr bodie hampered in huge wooden grates that keepe them fast sitting, so that they lie as it were in a cage, sleepe if they can: in the mozning they are loosed agayne, that they may go into the court.

A. lili.

Not.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Notwithstanding the strength of this pylson, it is kept with a garrison of men, part whereof watche within the house, part of them in the Court, some keepe about the pylson with lanterns and watchebelles answering one an other fyue tymes euery nyght, and geuing warning so lowde, that the *Loutea* resting in a chamber not neare therunto, may heere them. In these pylsons of condemned persons remaine some .15. other 20. yeeres imprisoned, not executed, for the loue of theyr honorable frendes that seeke to prolong theyr lyues. Many of these pylsoners be Shomakers, and haue from the king a certayne allowaunce of rise: some of them worke for the keeper, who suffereth them to goe at libertie without letters and boordes, the better to worke. Howbeit when the *Loutea* calleth his checke rolle, & with the keeper bieweth them, they al weare theyr lyueres, that is, boords at theyr neckes, yronned hand and foote. When any of these pylsoners dieth, he is to be scene of the *Loutea* and *Notaries*, brought out at a gate so narrow, that there can but one be drawn out there at once. The pylsoner beyng brought forth, one of the aforesayde *Partians* stryket hym thysle on the head with an yron sledge, that doone, he is deliuered vnto his frendes, yf he haue any, otherwysle the kyng byreth men to cary hym to his buriall in the fieldes.

Thus adulterers and theeuers are vsed. Such as be imprisoned for debt once knowen, lye there vntyl it be payed. The *Taisu* or *Loutea* calleth them many tymes before him by the vertue of his office, who vnderstanding the cause wherefoze they doo not pay theyr debtes, appointeth them a certayne tyme to doe it, wthin the compasse wherof if they discharge not theyr debtes beyng debtors in deede, then they be whipped & condemned to perpetual imprisonment: yf the creditours be many, & one is to be payd before an other, they do, contrary to our maner, pay him first, of whom they last borowed, and so ordinarly the rest, in suche sort that the first lender be the last recepuer. The same order is kept in paying legacies: the last named, recepueth his porcion first. They accompt it nothyng to shew fauour to such a one as can doo the lyke agayne: but to doo good to them that haue litle or nothing, that is worth thanks, therfoze pay they the last before the first, for that their entent seemeth rather to be vertuous then gainful.

When

Of like the first  
lenders be the  
more welthier.





When I sayde that suche as bee committed to pryson for theft & murder, were iudged by the Court, I ment not them that were apprehended in the deed doyng, for they need no tryall, but are brought immediatly befoze the *Tutan*, who out of hand giueth sentence. Other not taken so openly, and doe neede tryall, are the ma'efactors put to execution once a yeere in the chiefe cities, to keepe in awe the people: or condemned, doe remaine in pryson, loking for theyr day. The cues being taken, are carryed to pryson from one place to an other in a chest vpon mens shoulers, hyed theretofore by the kyng, the Chest is sixe handfulls hygh, the prysoner sitteth therein vpon a benche, the couer of the chest is two boordes, amyd them both a pillerlyke hole, for the prysoner his necke, there sitteth he with his head without the chest, & the rest of his body within, not able to moue or turne his head this way or that way, nor to plucke it in: the necessities of nature he voydeth at a hole in the bottome of the chest, the meat hee eateth is put into his mouth by others. There abydeth he day and nyght, durynge his whole iourney: if happely his porters stumble, or the chest doe logge, or be set downe carelesly, it turneth to his great paynes that sitteth therein, all such motions beyng vnto him hangyng as it were. Thus were our companions carryed from *Cinco*, seuen dayes iourney, neuer taking any rest as afterward they told vs, & theyr greatest griefe was to stave by the way: as soone as they came, beyng taken out of the chests, they were not able to stande on theyr feete, and two of them dyed shortly after.

When we laye in pryson at *Enquico*, we came many tymes abrode, and were brought to the pallaces of noble men, to be seene of them and theyr wyues, for that they had neuer seene any Portugall befoze. Many thinges they asked vs of our countrey, and our fashions, and dyd wypte euery thyng, for they be curious in nouelties aboute measure. The gentlemen shewe great curtesie vnto straungers, and so dyd we finde at their handes, and bycause that many tymes we were brought abrode into the cite, somewhat will I say of such thinges as I dyd see therein, beyng a gallant cite, and chiefe in one of the thirtiene thynges aforesayde.

The cite *Enquico*, is very great, and mightily walled with square stone both within and without, and as it may seeme by the heady thereof, filled vp in the middle with earth, layde ouer with

*Enquico.**Hereof to folow.*



with bricke and couered with tyle, after the maner of porches or galeries, that one myght dwell therein. The steps they vse, are so easily made, that one may go them by and down a horse backe, as easiely they doe: the streetes are paved, as already it hath been sayde: there be a great number of Merchantes, every one hath written in a great table at his dooze such thinges as he hath to sell. In lyke maner every artillane payntech out his craft: the market places be large, great aboundance of all thinges there be to be solde. The citie standeth vppon water, many streames run through it, the bankes pitched, and so broade that they serue for streetes to the cities vse. Ouer the streames are sundry byddges both of tymber & stone, that beyng made leuell with the streetes, hynder not the passage of the Barges to and fro, the chanelles are so deepe. Where the streames come in and goe out of the citie, bee certayne arches in the wall, there goe in and out they? Parai, that is a kynde of Barges they haue, and this onely the day tyme: at nyght these arches are closed by with gates, so doe they shut by all the gates of the citie. These streames and Barges doe ennoble the very muche the citie, and make it as it were to seme an other Venice. The buyldinges are euen, well made, hygh, not lofted, except it be some wherem merchandise is layde. It is a woide to see howe great these cities are, and the cause is, for that the houses are buylt euen, as I haue sayde, and doe take a great deale of roome. One thyng we sawe in this citie that made vs all to wonder, and is woorthy to bee noted: Namely, ouer a porche at the commyng in to one of the afore-sayde foure houses, the whiche the kyng hath in euery tyme for his gouernours as I haue erst sayde, standeth a Colonne buylt vppon fourtie pylers, eche one wherof is but one stone, eche one fourtie handfulls or spannes long: in bzeadth or compasse twelue, as many of vs byd measure them. Besydes this, they? greatnesse suche in one peece, that it myght seme impossible to worke them: they bee mozeouer cornerde, and in colour, length, and bzeadth so lyke, that the one nothyng dyffereth from the other. This thyng made vs all to wonder verye muche.

Parai.

¶ Wee

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Wee are wont to call this countrey *China*, and the people *Chineans*, but as long as we were prisoners, not hearing amongst them at any tyme that name, I determined to learne howe they were called: and asked sometymes by them thereof, for that they vnderstoode vs not whan wee called them *Chineans*, I answered them that all the inhabitantes of India named them *Chineans*, wherefoze I prayed them that they would tell mee, for what occasion they are so called, whether peradventure any cite of theyrs bare that name. Wherevnto they alwayes answered mee, to haue no suche name, nor euer to haue had. Then dyd I aske them what name the whole countrey beareth, and what they would answer being asked of other nations what countrymen they were? It was tolde me that of auncient tyme in this countrey had been many kynges, and though presently it were all vnder one, eche kyngdome neuerthelesse emoyed that name it fyrst had, these kyngdomes are the prouinces I spake of before. In conclusion they sayde, that the whole countrey is called *Tamen*, and the inhabitantes *Tamegines*, so that this name *China* or *Chineans*, is not heard of in that countrey. I doe thinke that the neareness of an other prouince thereabout called *Cochinchina*, and the inhabitantes thereof *Cochinesses*, fyrst discovered before that *China* was, lying not farre from *Malacca*, dyd geue occasion both to the one nation and to the other of that name *Chineans*, as also the whole countrey to be named *China*. But their proper name is that aforesayde.

Tamen the  
proper name of  
China.

I haue heard moreover that in the cite *Nanquin* remaineth a table of golde, and in it written a kyngs name, as a memory of that residence the kyngs were wont to keepe there. This table standeth in a great pallas, couered alwayes, except it bee in some of theyr festiuall dayes, at what tyme they are wont to let it be scene: couered neuerthelesse as it is, all the nobilitie of the cite goeth of duettie to doe it euery day reuerence. The lyke is done in the head cities of all the other shyes in the pallas of the *Ponchiafimi*, wherein these aforesayde tables doe stande with the kyngs name written in them, although no reuerence be done therunto but in solemne feastes.

I haue

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Pochang. al.

I haue lykewyse vnderstood that the citie *Pachin*, where the kyng maketh his abode, is so great, that to goe from one syde to the other, besydes the *Subarbes*, the which are greater than the citie it selfe, it requyret one whole day a horsebacke, going backe-ney pase. In the *Subarbes* be many wealthy marchantes of all sortes. They tolde me furthermoze that it was *Noted* about, and in the *Notes* great store of sylbe, wherof the kyng maketh great gaynes.

They enemies

It was also tolde mee that the kyng of *China* had no kyng to wage battayle withall, besydes the *Tartares*, with whom he had concluded a peace moze than fourescore yeeres agoe. Neuertheless the friendship was not so great, that the one nation might marry with the other. And demaunding with whom they married, they sayde, that in olde tyme the *Chinisch* kynges, when they would marry theyr daughters, accustomed to make a solempne feast, wherunto came all sortes of men. The daughter that was to be married, stode in a place where shee myght see them all, and looke whom shee lykedy best, him did shee chuse to husbende, and if happely he were of a base condition, hee became by and by a gentleman: but this custome had been left long since. Nowe a dayes the kyng marryeth his daughters at his owne pleasure, with great men of the same kyngdome: the lyke order he obserueth in the maryage of his sonnes.

Maryage of  
the kynges  
children.

They haue mozeouer one thing very good, and that whiche made vs all to marueyle at them being *Gentiles*: namely, that there be hospitalles in all theyr cities, alwayes full of people, we neuer sawe any poore body begge. We therefore asked the cause of this: answered it was, that in euery cite there is a great circuit, wherein be many houses for poore people, for blinde, lame, old folke, not able to traueyle for age, nor hauyng any other meanes to lyue. These folke haue in the aforesayde houses, euer plenty of rice duryng theyr lyues, but nothyng els. Such as be receyued into these houses, come in after this maner. When one is sicke, blinde, or lame, he maketh a supplication to the *Ponchiasii*, and prouyng that to be true he wyrteth, he remayneth in the aforesayde great lodgyng as long as he lyueth: besydes this they keepe in these places *Swyne* and *Hennes*, whereby the poore be releued without goyng a beggyng.

He speaketh  
not here of all  
*China*, but of  
the cities, for in  
other places  
there be beg-  
gers, as you  
haue scene al-  
ready, swar-  
ming out of  
trees.

I sayde





I sayd befoze that *China* was full of ryuers, but now I mynde to confyrme the same ane we: for the farther we went into the countrey, the greater we found the ryuers. Sometymes we were so farre of from the sea, that where we came no sea fyshe had been seene, and salt was there very deere, of freshe water fyshe yet was there great aboundance, & that fysch very good: they keepe it good after this maner. Where the ryuers doe meete, and so passe into the sea, there lyceth great stoze of Boates, specially where no salte water commeth, and that in Marche and Apryll. These Boates are so many that it seemeth wonderfull, ne serue they for ocher than to take small fyshe. By the ryuers sydes they make leynes of fine and strong nettes, that lye thre handfulls vnder water, and one aboue, to keepe and nourysch their fyshe in, vntyll suche tyme as ocher fyschers doe come with Boates, bynggng for that purpose certayne great chesses lyned with paper, able to holde water, wher ein they carry they fyshe by and downe the ryuer, euery day renuyng the chest with freshe water, and sellng they fyshe in euery cite, towne, and village, where they passe, vnto the people as they neede it: most of them haue nette leynes to keepe fyshe in alwayes for they prouision. Where the greater Boates can not passe any farther forwarde, they take lesser, and bycause the whole countrey is very well watered, there is so great plentie of ryuers sortes of fyshe, that it is wonderfull to see: assuredly we were amazed to beholde the maner of their prouision. They fyshe is chiefly nourtshed with the dung of Buffles and Oxen, that greatly fatteth it. Although I sayde they fyschng to be in Marche and Apryll at what tyme we sawe them doe it, neuertheless they tolde vs that they fysched at all tymes, for that usually they doe feede on fyshe, wher soe it behoueth them to make they prouision continually. When we had passed *Fuquien*, wee went into *Quicin* syde, where the fine claye vessell is made, as I sayde befoze: and we came to a cite, the one syde whereof is bulle bypon the foote of a hyl, wherby passeth a ryuer nauigable: there we tooke Boate, and went by water towarde the sea: on ech syde of the ryuer we found many cities, townes, and villages, where in we sawe great stoze of marchandise, but specially of fine clay: there byd wee lande by the way to buye victualles and ocher necessaries. Goyng downe this ryuer Southwarde, we were glad  
that

The Speech of  
Fuquien Spie.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



that we the we neare unto a warmer countrey, from whence we had been farre distant: this countrey we passed through in eyght dayes, for our iourney laye downe the streame. Before that I doe say any thyng of that shyre we came into, I will first speake of the great citie of *Quicin*, wherein alwayes remaineth a *Tuan*, that is a gouernour, as you haue seene, though some *Tuans* doe gouerne two or thre shyres.

That *Tuan* that was condemned for our cause, of whom I spake before, was bozne in this countrey, but he gouerned *Foquien* shyre: nothing it auayled him to bee so great an officer. This countrey is so great, that in many places where we went, there had ben as yet no talke of his death, although he were executed a whole yeere before. At the citie *Quancbe* whyther we came, the riuer was so great that it seemed a sea, though it were so litle where we tooke water, that we needed smal boates. One day about .ix. of þ clocke, beginning to row neare the walles with the streame, we came at noone to a brydge made of many barges, ouerlunked all togeather with two mighty cheyns. There staped we vntill it was late, but we saw not one go either by theron or downe, except two *Louteas* þ about the going downe of þ sun, came & set them downe there, the one in one side, the other in the other side. Than was the brydge opened in many places, & barges both great & smal to the number of .600. began to passe: those that went by the streame, at one place, such as came downe, at an other. With al had thus thot the brydge, than was it shut by againe. We heare say that euery day they take this order in all principall places of merchandys, for payng of þ custome vnto the king, specially for salt, wherof the greatest reuenews are made that the king hath in this countrey. The passages of the brydge where it is opened, bee so neare the shore, that nothing can passe without touching the same. To stay the barges at their pleasure, that they go no farther forwarde, are vled certayne pyon instrumentes. The brydge consisteth of .112. barges, there staped wee vntyll the euening that they were opened, lothselomely oppressed by the multitude of people that came to see vs, so many in number, that we were enforced to goe asyde from the banke vntyll such tyme as the brydge was opened: howbeit we were neuerthelesse thronged about w many boates full of people. And though in other cities and places where we went,

*Alis Cenchi.*

The knyges  
reuenues.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



went, the people carrie so importunate vpon vs, that it was needfull to withdraw our selues: yet wers we heere much moze molested for the number of people, and this brydge, the principal way out of the citie vnto an other place so well inhabited, that were it walled about, it myght bee compared to the citie. Whan we had shot the brydge, we kept along the citie vntill that it was nyght; than met we with an other ryuer that ioyned with this, we rowed by that by the walles vntyll we came to an other brydge gallantly made of barges, but lesser a great deale than that other brydge ouer the greater streame: heere stayed we that nyght, and other two dayes with moze quiet, being out of the pzeale of the people. These riuers do meet without at one corner point of the citie. In either of them were so many barges great and small, that we all thought them at the least to be aboue thre thousande: the greater number therof was in the lesser ryuer, where we were. Amongst the rest here lay certayne greater vessels, called in their language *Parai*, that serue for the *Tutan*. Whan he taketh his voyage by other ryuers that ioyne with this, towards *Pachin*, where the king maketh his abode. For, as many tymes I haue erst sayd, all this countrey is full of riuers. Desirous to see those *Parai* we got into some of them, where we found some chambers set foorth with gilded beds very richly, other furnished with tables and seates, & all other thinges so neate and in perfection, that it was wonderfull.

*Parai.*

*Quiacim* hyre, as farre as I can perceiue, lyeth vpon the south. On that syde we kept at our first entry thereto, trauelyng not far from the high mountaynes we saw there. A king what people dwelleth beyond those mountaynes, it was told me that they be theues, & men of a strange language: And bycause that vnto sundry places neare this riuer, & mountaynes do approach, whence the people issuing downe do many tymes great harme, this order is taken at h entry into *Quiacim* hyre. To gard this riuer wher-on continually go to & fro *Parai* great & small fraught with salt, & pondred with pepper, and other necessaries for that countrey: they do lay in diuers places certain *Parai*, & great barges armed, wherein watch & ward is kept day & night in both sides of the riuer, for the safetie of the passage, & securitie of suche *Parai* as doe remaine there, though the traueylers neuer go but many in company. In euery rode there be at the least thre, in some two hundred men, as the passage requyeth.

This

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



This garde is kept vsually vntill you come to the cite *Oncbia*, where continually the *Tutan* of this Iſpye, and eke of *Cautan*, maketh his abode. From that cite vpworde, where the ryer wareth more narrow, and the passage more daungerous, there be alwayes armed one hundred and ſixtie *Parai*, to accompany o- ther vellelles fraughte with marchandyle, and all this at the king his charges. This ſeemed vnto me one of the ſtrangeſt thinges I dyd ſee in this countrey.

When we laye at *Fuquien*, we dyd ſee certayne *Doozes*, who knewe ſo litle of theyr ſecte, that they could ſay nothyng els but that *Dachomet* was a *Dooze*, my father was a *Dooze*, and I am a *Dooze*, with ſome ocher wordes of theyr *Alcozane*, where- withall, in abſtinence from Swynnes fleſhe, they lyue vntill the deuyll take them all. This when I ſawe, & beyng ſure that in many *Cbiſiſ* citles the reliques of *Dachomet* are kept, as ſoone as we came to the cite where theſe ſelowes be, I enſourmed my ſelfe of them, and learned the truth.

Theſe *Doozes*, as they tolde me, in tymes paſt came in great ſhippes fraughte with marchandile from *Pachin* ward, to a *Bozte* graunted vnto them by the kyng, as hee is wont to all them that traffike into this countrey, where they beyng arriued at a lide towne ſtandynge in the hauens mouth, in tyme conuerted vnto their ſecte the greateſt *Loutea* there. When that *Loutea* with all his family was become *Doozyſh*, the reſt began lykewiſe to doe the ſame. In this part of *Cbiſia* the people be at libertie, euery one to worſhypp and ſolow what him lyketh beſt. Wherefore no body tooke heede thereto, vntill ſuch tyme as the *Doozes* perceyving that many ſolowed them in ſuperſtition, and that the *Loutea* ſe- noured them, they began to forbyd wholy the eatyng of Swines fleſh. But all this countrymen and women, choſing rather to for- ſake father and mocher, than to leaue of eatyng of porke, by no meanes woult yelde to that proclamation. For beſides the great deſyre they all haue to eate that kynde of meate, many of them doe lyue thereby: and therefore the people complayned vnto the *Magiſtrates*, accusing the *Doozes* of a conſpiracy pretended be- twixt them and the *Loutea* agaynſt theyr kyng. In this countrey, as no ſuſpicion, ſo not one traſperous worde is long borne with- all: ſo was the kyng ſpeedily aduerted thereof, who gaue com-  
many





commaundment out of hande that the aforesayde *Lutes* should be put to death, and with hym the *Woozes* of most importancer the other to be layde first in pylson, and afterwarde to be sent abroad into certayne cities, where they remayned perpetuall slaues vnto the kyng. To this cite came by happe men and women threescore and odde, who at this day are brought to five men and foure women, for it is nowe twentie yeeres agoe this happened. They offsprynge passeth the number of 200. and they in this cite, as the rest in other cities, whither they were sent, haue they *Moscheas*, wherunto they al resorte every sryday to kepe they holysdaye. But, as I thynke, that wpll no longer endure, then whites they do lyue, that came from thence, for they posteritie is so confused, that they haue nothing of a *Wooze* in them but abstinence from swynes fleshe, and yet many of them do eate thereof myllie. They tell me that they native countrey hath name *Camarian*, a fytne lande, whereto be many kynges, and the Indishe countrey well knowen vnto them. It may so be: for as sone as they vpd ser our seruauntes (our seruauntes were *Prenzarettes*) they iudged them to be Indians: many of they woordes sounded vppon the Perslike tongue, but none of vs coude vnderstand them. I asked them whether they conuerted any of the *Chinishe* nation vnto they secte: they answered me, that with much a do they conuerted the women with whom they do marry, yeldyng me no other cause thereof, but the difficultie they find in them to be brought from eating swines fleshe and dnyking of wine. I am perswaded therfore, that if this countrey were in league with vs, so by dnyng them mycher of both, it would be an easy matter to draw them to our religion, from they superstition, wher at they them selues do laugh when they do their *Idolatrie*. I haue learned mozeouer that the sea wherby these *Woozes* that came to *China*, were wodout to traualle, is a very great gulfe, that falleth into this countrey out from *Tartaria* and *Persia*, lemyng on the other syde all the countrey of *China*, and lande of the *Mogowites*, by dnyng alwayes towarde the south: and of all lykelyhood it is euen so, because that these *Woozes*, the whiche we haue seene, be rather browne then white, wherby they shewe them selues to come from some warmer countrey then *China* is, neere to *Pachin*, where the

That is they temples.

It shoulde seeme by theyr voyage to be *Cardandan* in *Ortelius*.

It seemeth they came by the river from the *Caspian* sea.

At *sacan*.

kk.i.

ryuers

Lden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



ryuers are frozen in the wynter for colde, and many of them so vehemently, that cartes may passe ouer them.

Hi. Nuings  
Tartares.

We dyd see in this citie many *Tartares*, *Mogorites*, *Bremes*, and *Laoynes*, both men & women. The *Tartares* are men very white, good horsemen and archers, confynng with *China* on that side where *Pachin* standeth, separated from thence by great mountaynes that are betwixt these kingdomes. Ouer them be certayne wayes to passe, and for both sydes, Castelles continually kepte with souldiers: in tyme past the *Tartares* were woont alwayes to haue warrs with the *Chinians*, but these foure scoze yeeres past they were quiete, vntill the seconde yeere of our imprysonment. The *Mogorites* be in lyke maner whyte, and heathen, we are aduertised that of one syde they bozder vpon these *Tartares*, and confine with the *Persike Tartares* on the other syde, whereof we sawe in them some tokens, as theyr maner of clothes, and that kynde of hat the *Saracenes* do weare. The *Doozes* affirmed, that where the kyng lyeth, there be many *Tartares* and *Mogorites*, that brought into *China* certayne blewes of great valewe: al we thought it to be *Vanil* of *Cambaia* woont to be sold at *Ormus*. So that this is the true situation of that countrey, not in the Northpartes, as many tymes I haue harde saye, confynng with *Germanie*.

Mounts  
Dont.

Mogorites.

Bremes.

As for the *Bremes* we haue seene in this citie *Chenchi* certayne men & women, amongst whom there was one that came not long since, hauing as yet her heare tyed vp after the *Pegues* fashions: this woman, and other moe with whom a blacke *Dooze* damsell in our companie had conference, and dyd vnderstande them well ynough, had dwelle in *Pegbu*. This newe come woman, imaginynge that we ment to make our abode in that citie, byd vs to be of good comfote, for that her countrey was not distant from thence aboute fve dayes iourney, and that out of her countrey there laye a hygh way for vs home into our owne. Beyng asked the way, she answered that the fyrst thre dayes the way lyeth ouer certayne great mountaynes and wylder nesse, afterwarde people to be mette withall agayne. Thence two dayes



dayes lojney more to the Breames countrey. Wherefore I doo conclude, that *Chenchi* is one of the conynes of this kyngdome, seperated by certayne huge mountaynes, as it hath been already sayd, that lye out towardes the South. In the residue of these mountaynes standeth the prouince *Sian*, the *Laoyns* countrey, *Cambaia*, *Chinapa*, and *Cochinchina*. Southwardes  
from *Chenchi*  
to the sea.

This citie, cheefe of other fyrteene, is situated in a pleasaunt playne, aboundyng in thynges necessarie, sea fysh only excepted, for it standeth farre from the sea: of freshe fysh so muche store, that the market places are neuer emptie. The walles of this citie are very strong and hygh: one day byd I see the *Louteas* thereof go vpon the walles, to take the viewe thereof, bozne in theyr seates I spake of before, accompanied with a troupe of hoysmen, that went two and two: It was tolde me they myght haue gone thye and thye. We haue seene mozeouer, that with in this aforesayde citie the kyng hath moe than a thousand of his kynne lodged in great pallaces, in diuers partes of the citie: theyr gates be redde, and the entrye into theyr houses, that they may be knowen, for that is the kyng his colour. These gentlemen, accorpyng to theyr nearenesse in blood vnto the kyng, as soone as they be married, receiue theyr place in honour: this place neither encreaseth nor diminisbeth in any respect, as long as the kyng lyueth, the kyng appoynteth them theyr wyues and familie, allowyng them by the Doneth al thynges necessarie abundantly, as he doth to his gouernours of theyres and cities, howbeit, not one of these hath as long as he lyueth, any charge or gouernment at al. They geue them selues to eatyng and drynkyng, and be for the most part burly men of bodie, inlomucho that espyng any one of them, whom we had not seene before, we myghte knowe hym to be the kyng his colyn. They be neuerthelesse very pleasaunt, courteous, and sayne conditioned: ne byd we finde, at the time we were in that citie, so much honour and good entertaunement any where, as at theyr handes. They byd vs to theyr houses, to eate and drynke, and when they founde vs not, or were not wylling to go with them, they byd our seruantes, & slaves, causing them to lye down with the fist. Notwithstanding the good lodgyng these gentlemen haue so commodious that they want:

kk. ii.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



want nochyng, yet are they in this bondage, that during lyfe they neuer goe abrode. The cause, as I byd vnderstand, wherefoze the kyng so bleth his consynes, is that none of them at anye tyme may rebell agaynst hym: and thus he shutteth them by in thre or foure other cities. Most of them can play on the Lute: and to make that kynde of pastyme peculiar vnto them only, all other in the cities where they do lyue be forbydden that instrument, the Curtisians and bynde folke only excepted, who be musicians, and can play.

This king furthermore for the greater securitie of his realme, and the auoydyng of tumultes, letteth not one in all his countrey to be called Lord, except he be of his blood. Many great estates and gouernours there be, that during theyr office are lodged Lordlyke, and do beare the port of myghtie Princes: but they be so many tymes displaced, and other placed a newe, that they haue not the whyle to become corrupt. True it is that during theyr office they be well prouided for, as after warde also lodged at the kynges charges, and in pension as long as they liue, payde them Monethly in the cities where they dwell, by certaine officers appoynted for that purpose. The kyng then is a Lorde only, not one besydes hym as you haue scene, except it be suche as be of his blood. A Nephewe Ipketwyle of the kyng, the kyng his sisters sonne, lyeth continually within the walles of the citie, in a strong pallace built Castellwyle, euen as his other cousins do, remainyng alwayes within doores, serued by Eunuches, neuer dealyng with any matters. Their festiuall dayes, newe Moones, and full Moones the magistrates make great bankets, & so do such as be of the king his blood. The king his Nephewe hath name *Vansali*, his pallace is walled about, the wall is not high, but foure square, and in circuit nothing infertour to the walles of Goa, the outside is painted red, in euery square a gate, & ouer each gate a towre, made of timber excellently wel wrought: before the principal gate of the foure, that openeth into the high street, no Louer, be he neuer so great, may passe on horsebacke, or carried in his seat. Ampode this quadrangle standeth the pallace where that gentleman lieth, doubtlesse worth the sight, although we came not in to see it. By report the roofes of the towres and house, are glased greene, the greater part of the quadrangle

Goa is a citie  
of the Portu-  
gales in East  
Indie.





*Quadrangle* set with sauage trees, as Okes, Chestnuttes, Cypres, Pineapples, Cedars, and other suche lyke that we do wante, after the maner of a wood, wherin are kepte Stagges, Oxen, and other beastes; for that Lorde his recreation neuer goyng abrode, as I haue sayde. One prebeminence this citie hath aboute the reste where we haue been, and is of ryght as we do thynke, that besydes the multitude of market places, wherin all thynges are to be solde, throughe euery strate continually are cryed all thynges necessarie, as fleshe of all sortes, freshe fysh, hearbes, oyle, vineger, meale, rize, in summa, al thinges so plentifully, that many houles neede no seruauntes, euery thing beyng brought to theyr doores. Most part of the merchantes remaine in the suburbes, for that þ cities are shut by euery nyght as I haue sayde. The merchantes therefore the better to attende theyr businesse, do chuse rather to make theyr abode without in the suburbes, then within the citie. I haue seene in this ryuer a pretie kynde of fshyng, not to be omitted in my opynion, and therefore wyll I set it downe. The kyng hath in many ryuers good stozes of barges full of sea crows, that breede, are fedde, and do dye therein, in certayne cages, allowed monethly a certayne prouision of fyse. These barges the kyng bestoweth bypon his greatestt magistrates, geuyng to some two, to some thre of them, as he thynketh good, to fysh therewithall after this maner. At the houre appoynted to fysh, all the barges are brought togeather in a circle, where the ryuer is shalowe, and the crows, tyed togeather vnder the wynges, are let leape downe into the water, some vnder, some aboue, wozth the lookyng vppon: eche one as he hath filled his bagge, goeth to his owne barge and emptieth it, whiche done, he retourneth to fysh agayne. Thus hauyng taken good stozes of fysh, they set the crows at libertie, and do suffer them to fysh for theyr owne pleasure. There were in that citie, where I was, euentye barges at the least of these aforesayde crows. I wente almost euery day to see them, yet coulde I neuer be throughefly satisfied to see so straunge a kynde of fshyng.

Rk.iii.

Of

Fins.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



# ¶ Of the Ilande Giapan, and

other litle Isles in the East Ocean.

By R. Wylles.



The extreme part of the known worlde be-  
to vs, is the noble Ilande Giapan, written  
ootherwyle Iapon and Iapan. This Iland  
standeth in the East Ocean, beyonde all  
Asie, betwixte Cathayo & the West Indies  
36. degrees Northwarde from the equi-  
noctial line, in the same climate with the  
South part of Spayne and Portugall, distant from thence by  
sea . 6000. leagues: the trauaile thither, both for ciuile dis-  
corde, great piracie, and often shipwackes, very daungerous.  
This countrey is hylly, and pestred with snowe, wherefore it is  
neither so warme as Portugall, & yet very pooze, as farre as we  
can learne, wantyng oyle, butter, cheese, mylke, egges, suger,  
honny, by neger, saffarne, cynamome, and pepper. Barly  
bzanne the Ilanders do vse in steede of salte: medicinable  
thinges holsome for the body haue they none at al. Neuerthelesse  
in that Iland sundry frutes do grow, not much vnlike the frutes  
of Spayne: a great store of Syluer mynes are therein to be seene.  
The people tractable, ciuile, wyttie, courteous, without de-  
cepte, in vertue and honest conuersation exceeding all other na-  
tions lately discouered, but so muche standyng vpon theyr re-  
putation, that theyr chiefe Idole may be thought honour. The  
contempte therof caueth among them much discorde and debate,  
manslaughter and murder: euen for theyr reputation they do  
honour theyr parentes, keepe theyr promyses, absteyne from  
adultery and robberyes, punyshing by death the least robbery  
done, holdyng for a pynnciple, that whosoener stealeth a tryfle,  
wyl if he see occasion steale a greater thing. It may be theise is  
so seuerely punished of them, for that the nation is oppressed with  
scarciute of al thynges necessarye, and so pooze, that euen for mi-  
serie they strangle theyr owne chyldren, preferring death before  
want. These felowes do nether eat nor kyll any foule. They  
lyue chiefly by fysh, hearbes, and frutes, so healthfully, that  
they dye very olde. Of Ryce and Wheate there is no great store.

¶

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



No man is ashamed there of his pueritie, ne be they gentlemen therfore lesse honored of the meaner people, ne wyl the poorest gentleman there. matche his chyld with the baser sort for any gayne, so muche they do make moze accompt of gentry then of wealth. The greatestt delygth they haue, is in armonie, eache boy at fourteene yeeres of age, be he bozne gentle or ocher wyse, hath his sworde and dagger: very good archers they be, contempnyng all other nations in comparison of theyr manhood and prowesse, puttyng not vp one iniurie, be it neuer so small in woꝛde or dede, among them schies. They scede moderately, but they dꝛynke largely. The vse of vines they knowe not, theyr dꝛynke they make of Rye, vterly they do abboꝛe vyle, and all games, accomptyng nothyng moze vyle in a man, then to geue hym selfe vnto those chynges, that make vs greedie and desirous to get other mens goodes. If at any time they do sweare, for that selborne they are wont to do, they sweare by the Sunne: many of them are taught good letters. wherfore they may so much the sooner be broughe vnto Christianitie. Eche one is contented with one wyfe: they be all desirous to learne, and naturally enclined vnto honestie and curtesie: godly talke they lysten vnto wplynglye, especially when they vnderstand it througthlye. Theyr gouernment consisteth of thre estatess. The first place is due vnto the hygh priest, by whose lawes and decrees, al publique and pꝛiuate matters, apparteynyng vnto religion, are decided. The lectes of theyr cleargie men, whom they do call *Bonzi*, be of no estimation or aucthoritie, except the hygh priest by letters patent do confyrme the same: he confyrmeth and alloweth of theyr *Tandi*, who be as it were Bishops, although in many places they are nominated by sundrye Princes. These *Tandi*, are greatly honoured of all sortes: they do geue benefices vnto inferiour ministers, and doo graunt licences for many chynges, as to eate fleshe vppon those daies they go in Pilgrimage to theyr Idoles, with suche lyke pꝛiualleges. Finallye, this hygh priest, wont to be chosen in *China*, for his wisdom and learnyng: made in *Giapan*, for his gentry and byrth: hath so large a Dominion, and reuenues so great, that thsones he beareth the pety Kinges, and Princes there.

Theyr gouernment.

*Tandi*.

Rh. lll.

Theyr

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Theyr seconde principall Magistrate, in theyr language *Vo*, is the cheefe *Herehaught*, made by succession and byrth, honored as a God. This gentleman neuer toucheth the grounde with his foote without forsaytynge of his office, he neuer goeth abrode out of his house, nor is at all tymes to be seene. At home he is epyther carried about in a lytter, or els he goeth in wooden *Choppines* a foote hygh from the grounde: commonly he sitteth in his *Chayze* with a swoord in one syde, and a bowe and arrowes in the other, next his body he weareth blacke, his outward garment is redde, all shadowed ouer with *Cypesse*, at his cap hang certayne *Lambeare* much lyke vnto a *Bishops Wyper*, his forehead is paynted whyte and red, he eateth his meate in earthen *Dishes*. This *Herehaught* determineth in all *Giapan* the diuers tytles of honour, whereof in that Iland is great plentie, eache one perticularly knowen by his badge, commonly seene in saylyng by theyr letters, and dalyly altered accordyng to theyr degrees. About this *Vo* every noble man hath his *Soliciter*, for the nation is so desirous of pryse and honour, that they stryue among them selues who may byrth hym best. By these meanes the *Herehaught* groweth so ryche, that although he haue neyther lande nor any reuenewes otherwys, yet may he be accompted the wealthepest man in al *Giapan*. For thre causes this great Magistrate may loose his office: first, if he touch the ground with his foote, as it hath been already sayd: next, if he kyl anye body: thyrde, yf he be founde an euemie vnto peace and quietnesse, howbeit neyther of these aforesayde causes is sufficient to put hym to death.

Theyr thyrde cheefe officer is a *Judge*, his office is to take by & to end matters in controuersie, to determine of warrs & peace, that which he thynketh ryght, to punyssh rebelles, wherein he may commaunde the noble men to assist hym upon paine of forsaytynge theyr goodes: neuerthelesse at all tymes he is not obeyed, for that many matters are ended rather by might and armes, than determined by law. Other controuersies are decyded either in the *Tempozal Court*, as it seemeth good vnto the *Princes*, or in the *Spiritual consistoite* before the *Tundi*.

Rebelles are executed in this maner, especially yf they be noble men, or officers. The kyng, looke what daye he greeueth sentence





sentence agaynst any one, the same day the partie, where soeuer he be, is aduertised thereof: and the day to take him of his execution. The condemned person asketh of the messenger whers that it may be lawfull for him to kyll him selfe: the which thing when the kyng doeth graunt, the partie takyng it for an honour, putteth on his best apparell, and launcyng his body a crosse from the brest downe all the belly, murthereth him selfe. This kynde of death they take to be without infamy, ne doe their children, for they fathers crime so punished, lose they goods. But if the king reserue them to be executed by the Hangman, than flocketh hee together his children, his seruantes, and friends home to his house, to preserue his lyfe by force. The kyng committeth the fetching of him out vnto his chiefe Judge, who sittt crosst vpon him with bow and arrowes, & after ward with pykes & swordes, untill the rebell and all his family be slayne, to they perpetual ignominie and shame.

The Indyche wyters make mention of sundry great cities in this Island, as *Cangoxima* a *Hancu* towne in the South parte thereof, and *Meaco* distant from thence 300 leagues northward, the royall seat of the kyng, and most wealthy of all other townes in that Islande. The people thereabout is very noble, and they language the best *Iaponishe*. In *Meaco* are sayde to be nieneite thousande houses inhabited and bywarde, a famous *Uniuerstie*, and in it fyue principall Colledges, besydes closes and cloysters of *Bonzi*, *Leguixil*, and *Hanacata*, that is, *Priestes*, *Monkes*, and *Nunnes*. Other fyue notable *Uniuersties* there be in *Giapan*, namely, *Coia*, *Negru*, *Homi*, *Frenos*, and *Banda*. The first foure haue in them at the least 3500 schollers: in the fyft are many moe. For *Banda* prouince is very great, and possessed by fyve princes, fyue wherof are ballalles vnto the sixt, yet he him selfe subiecte vnto the *Iaponishe* kyng, vsually called the great king of *Meaco*: lesser scholes there be many in diuers places of this Islande. And thus muche specially concerning this glorious Islande, among so many barbarous nations and rude regions, haue I gathered together in one summe, out of sundry letters wytten from thence into *Europe*, by no lesse faithfull reporters thā famous traueylers. For confirmation wherof, as also for the knowledg of other thinges not conteyned in the premises, the curious rea-

DCC

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



bers may peruse these foure volumes of Indische matters written ten long agoe in Italian, and of late compendiously made latin, by *Petrus Maffei* my olde acquainted friend, entitling the same, *De rebus Iaponicis*. One whole letter out of the first booke thereof, specially entreatyng of that countrey, haue I done into Englyshe word for word, in suche wyse as foloweth.

*Aloisius Froes*, to his companyons in Iesus Christ,  
that remayne in China and Indie.

**T**He last yere, deare brethren, I wrote vnto you from *Firando*, howe *Cosmas Turrianus* had appoynted me to traueyle to *Meaco*, to help *Gasper Vilela*, for that there the hartest was great, the labourers fewe, and that I should haue for my companon in that iourney *Aloisius Almeida*. It seemeth now my parte, hauing by the helpe of God ended so long a voyage, to signifie vnto you by letter suche thinges specially as I myght thinke you woulde most delyght to knowe. And because at the begynnynge *Almeida* and I so parted the whole labour of wytyng letters betwixt vs, that he should speake of our voyage, and suche thinges as happened therein, I should make relation of the *Meachians* estate, and wyte what I could well learne of the *Giapans* maners and conditions: settyng asyde all discourses of our voyage, that whiche standeth me vppon I wil discharge in this Epistle, that you considering howe artificially, how cunningly, vnder the pretexte of religion that craftie aduersary of mankynde, leadeth and draweth vnto perdition the *Giaponish* myndes, bynded with many superstitions and ceremonies, may the more pittie this nation.

The inhabitants of *Giapan*, as men that neuer had greatly to doe with other nations, in their Geography diuided the whole world into three partes, *Giapan*, *Sian*, and *China*: And albeit the *Giapans* receyued out of *Sian*, and *China*, their superstitions and ceremonies, yet doe they neuerthelesse contemne all other nations in comparison of them selues, & standyng in their owne conceite doe far preferre them selues before all other sortes of people in wisdom and policie.

Touching the situation of the countrey, & nature of the soyle, vnto the thinges eschewed erst written, this one thing wil I adde: In these Ilandes the sommer to be most hot, the winter extreme colde. In the kyngdome of *Canga*, as we call it, falleth so muche snow,



470  
 other many tymes, wherein they vse great diligence, especially in  
 drincking one to an other, insomuch that the better sorte, least they  
 myght rudely commit some fault therein, doe vse to reade certaine  
 bookes written of dueties and ceremonies apperteynyng vnto  
 bankettes. To be delicate and fine, they put theyr meat into their  
 mouthes with litle forks; accompting it great rudenes to touch  
 it with theyr fingers: wynter and sommer they drinke water as  
 hot as they may possible abyde it. Theyr houses are in daunger  
 of fyre, but finely made, and cleane, layde all ouer with straw pal-  
 lettes, wherevpon they doe both sit in steede of stooles, and lye  
 in theyr clothes, with billets vnder theyr heades. For feare of de-  
 syling these pallettes, they goe epyther barefoote within doores, or  
 weare strawe pantofles on theyr buskymmes when they come a-  
 broade, the which they laye asyde at theyr retorne home agayne.  
 Gentlemen for the most parte doe passe the nyght in banketting,  
 musike, and bayne discourses, they sleepe the day tyme. In *Mea-  
 co* and *Sacajo* there is good store of beddes, but they be very litle,  
 and may be compared vnto our purs.

In bynngyng by theyr chyldren they vse wordes onely to re-  
 buke them, admonishyng as diligently and aduisedly boyes of six  
 or seuen yeeres age, as though they were olde men. They are gi-  
 uen very much to entertayne strangers, of whom most curiously  
 they loue to aske euen in trifles what forreyn nations doe, and  
 theyr fashions. Suche argumentes and reasons as be manifest,  
 and are made playne with examples, doe greatly persuade them.  
 They detest all kynde of theft, whosoever is taken in that faulte  
 may be slayne freely of any body. No publike yllons, no com-  
 mon gables, no ordinary Iusticers: pvtuately eche householder  
 hath the hearyng of matters at home in his owne house, and the  
 punishyng of greater crimes that deserue death without delaye.  
 Thus vsually the people is kept in awe and feare.

About foure hundred yeeres agoe (as in theyr olde recordes  
 we fynde) all *Giapan* was subiecte vnto one *Emperor*, whose royall  
 seate was *Meaco*, in the *Giaponishe* language called *Cubacama*.  
 But the nobilitie rebellyng agaynst him, by litle and litle haue  
 taken away the greatest parte of his dominion, howbeit his title  
 continually remaineth, and the residue in some respect doe make  
 great accompt of him stil, acknowledgedging him for theyr superior.  
 Thus



Thus the Empire of *Giapan*, in times past but one about, is now divided into little like kingdoms, the which cause of civile warres continually in that Mann, as no small hinderance of the Gospell, whilst the kynges that dwell neare together inuade one an other, eche one comyng to make his kyngdome greater. Furthermore in the cite *Adacco* is the pallace of the high priest, whom that nation honoureth as a God, he dwells in his house 366. stolles, one whereof by course is eury nyght set by his side for a watcheman. He is thought of the common people so holy, that it may not be lawfull for him to goe upon the earth. Whappely he doe set one foote to the ground, he loseth his office. He is not serued very sumptuously, he is mapainted by almes. The heards and beards of his ministers are shaven, they haue name *Cangnes*, and theyr auctoritie is great throughout all *Giapan*. The *Cabucama* bleth them for Embassabours to decide controversies betwixte princes, and to ende theyr warres, whereof they are wont to make very great gayne. It is now two yeres since, or there about, that one of them came to *Bungo*, to enuoy of peace betwixt the kyng thereof, and the kyng of *Amanguzzo*. This Agent favouring the kyng of *Bungo* his cause more than the other, brought to passe that the foyleyde kyng of *Bungo* should keepe two kyngdomes, the which he had taken in warres from the kyng of *Amanguzzo*. Wherefore he had for his rewarde of the kyng of *Bungo* above thirtie thousande Ducates. And thus saith heereof.

But his almes  
are very good.

It come now to other superstitions and ceremonies, that you may see, deare brethren, that whiche I sayde in the beginning, howe suche the deuyll hath deceyued the *Giapanishe* nation, and howe diligent and ready they be to obey and worship him. And first, all remembrance and knowledge not onely of Christ our redeemer, but also of that one God the maker of all thinges, is cleane extinguisht, & utterly abolished out of the *Giapanis* hartes. Howeouer theyr superstitious sectes are many, whereas it is lawfull for eche one to folow that which lyeth him best: but the principall sectes are two, namely the *Amidans* and *Xacians*. Wherefore in this countrey shall you see many wonderfull, not onely of *Bonzii* men, but also of *Bonzie* women diuersly attyred, for some doe weare whyte vnder, and blacke upper garments, other goe apparelled in ashe colour, & theyr *Idole* hath name *Demichis* from

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





from these the *Amidans* differ very muche. Agayne the men *Bonzü* for the most parte dwell in sumptuous houses, and have great revenues. These felowes are chaste by commaundement, marry they may not vnder payne of death. In the mydd of theyr Temple is erected an Altar, whereon standeth a wodden Idole of *Amida*, naked from the gyble vpwarde, with holes in his eares, after the maner of Italian Gentlewomen, sitting on a wooden rose, goodly to beholde. They haue great libraries, and halles for them all to dyne and suppe togeather, and belles wherewith they are certayne houres called to prayers. In the euenyng the Superintendent gyueth eche one a theame for meditation. After mydnyght before the Altar in theyr Temple they doe say Mattens as it were out of *Xaca* his last booke, one quier one versle, the other quier an other. Early in the mornyng eche one gyueth him selfe to meditation one houre: they haue theyr heaues and beaues. Theyr Cloysters be very large, and within the pprecincte thereof, Chappelles of the *Fotoquens*, for by that name some of the *Giapanish* Sainctes are called: theyr holydayes yeerely be very many. Most of these *Bonzü* be Gentlemen, for that the *Giapanish* nobilitie, charged with many chyldren, vse to make most of them *Bonzü*, not being able to leaue for eche one a patrymony good ynough. The *Bonzü* most couetously bent, know all the wayes howe to come by money. They sell vnto the people many scoles of paper, by the helpe whereof the common people thinketh it selfe warranted from all powere of the deuylles. They borowe lykewyse money to bee repayde with great vsury in an other world, gyuyng by Obligation vnto the lender an assurance thereof, the whiche departyng out of this lyfe hee may carry with him to hell.

*Inamburn,*

There is an other great company of suche as are called *Inamburn*, with curde and starvyng heare. They make profession to fynde out agayne thinges either lost or stolen, after this sorte. They set before them a chyld, whom the deuyl inuadeth, called by thither by charmes: of that chyld than doe they aske that which they are desirous to knowe.

These mens prayers both good and bad are thoughte greatly to preuaile, insomuch that both their blessinges and theyr curses they



they sell vnto the people . The Monkes of this order, before they be admitted, goe together two or three thousande in a company, by a certayne high mountayne to do penance there, threescore dayes voluntarily punishyng them selues . In this tyme the deuyll sheweth him selfe vnto them in sundry shapen: and they, lyke young graduates, admitted as it were felowes into some certayne company, are set forth with whyte casselles hanging about theyr neckes, and blacke Bonettes that scarcely couer any moze than the crowne of theyr heades . Thus attyed they range abrode in all *Giapan*, to set out them selues and their companyng to sale, eche one beatyng his basen bee carryeth alwayes about with him, to gyue notice of theyr companyng in all townes where they passe.

There is also an other sorte called *Genguis*, that make profession to shewe by southsaying where stolen chinges are, and who were the theeves. These dwel in the toppe of an high mountayne, blacke in face for the continuall heate of the sunne, for the colde, wyndes, and rapnes they doe continually endure . They marry but in theyr owne tribe and lynes: the reporte goeth that they bee horned beastes . They clyme by most hygh rocks and hylles, and goe ouer very great rupts by the onely arte of the deuyll, who to byyng those wretches the moze into errour, byddeth them to goe vp a certayne hygh mountayne, where they stande miserably gazing and earnestly lookyng for him as long as the deuyll appoynteth them . At the lynch at noone tyme, or in the euenyng, commeth that deuyll, whom they call *Amida*, among them to shewe him selfe vnto them: this shew breedeth in the byaynes and hartes of men suche a kynde of superstition, that it can by no meanes be rooted out of them afterwarde.

The deuyll was wont also in an other mountaine to shewe him selfe vnto the *Giaponish* nation. Who so was moze desirous than other, to go to heauen and to enioy *Paradys*, thither went he to see that syght, and hauyng seene the deuyll, followed hym, so by the deuyll persuaded, into a denne wayll hee came to a deepe pytte . Into this pytte the deuyll was wont to leape, & to take with him his woorthypper whom he there murdered. This deceit was thus perceyued . An olde man blynded with this superstition, was by his soune dissuaded from thence, but all in vayne.

Wherfore

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Wherfore his sonne folowed him privately into that denne to his house and arrotowes, where the deuyll gallantly appeared vnto him in the shape of a man. Whilst the olde man falleth downe to worship the deuyll, his sonne speedily shooting an arrowe at the spirite so appearing, stroke a fowle in steede of a man, so that deuyll was that shape altered. This olde man his sonne tracking the fowle so running away, came to that pit wherof I spake, and in the bottome thereof he founde many bones of dead men, deceyued by the deuyll after that sorte in tyme past. Thus deliuered hee his father from present death, and all ocher from so pestilene an opinion.

There is furthermore a place bearyng name *Coia*, very famous for the multitude of Abbeyes the *Bonzis* haue therein. The beginner and founder wherof is thought to be one *Combendaxis* a subtle craftie felowe, that gotte the name of holynesse by cunning speache, although the lawes and ordinances he made were altogether deuilllike: he is sayde to haue founde out the *Giapanische* letters used at this day. In his later yeeres this slym subtle buryed him selfe in a fouresquare graue, foure cubites deepe, seuerely forbydyng it to be opened, for that than he dyed not, but rested his body, wearyed with continuall businesse, vntill many thousande thousandes of yeeres were passed, after the whiche tyme a great learned man named *Mirozi* should come into *Giapan*, and than would he ryle by out of his graue agayne. About his tombe many lampes are lyghted, sent thither out of vnyuersal prouinces, for that the people is perswaded, that whosoener is liberall and beneficiall towards the beautifying of that monument, shall not onely encrease in wealth in this worlde, but in the lyfe to come be safe through *Combendaxis* helpe. Suche as gyue them selues to worship him, liue in those Monasteries or Abbayes, with shaven heads, as though they had forsaken all secular matters, wheras in deede they wallow in all sortes of wickednesse and lust. In these houses, the which are many (as I sayde) in number, doe remaine 6000. *Bonzis* or thereabout, besides the multitude of laye men: women be restrayned from thence vpon payne of death. An ocher company of *Bonzis* dwelleth at *Fatomochaiti*. They teache a great multitude of chyldren all triches and sleights of guyle and thieft: whom they doe fynde to be of great covardnesse, those  
doe



doe they instruct in all the petigrues of princes, and fashions of the nobilitie, in chivalry, & eloquence, and so send them abroad into other prouinces, attyred lyke yong princes, to this ende, that saynyng them selues to be nobly bozne, they may with great summes of money, bozowed vnder the colour and pretence of nobilitie, retorne agayne. Wherefore this place is so infamous in all *Giapan*, that if any schollar of that order bee happely taken abroad, hee incontynently dyeth for it. Neuerthelesse these con-syners leaue not dayly to vse theyr wonted wickednesse and knauery.

North from *Giapan*, three hundred leagues out of *Meaco*, lyeth a great country of sauage men, clothed in beastes skynnes, rough bodied, with huge beardes, and monstrous muchaches, the which they hold by with litle forks as they dzyrke. These people are great dzyrkers of wyne, fierce in warres, and much feared of the *Giapans*: beyng hurte in fight, they walbe theyr woundes with salte water, other surgerye haue they none. In theyr byettes they are sayde to carry looking glasses: their swordes they tye to theyr heades, in suche wyse, that the handle doe rest vppon their shoulders. Seruice and certimonies haue they none at all, onely they are wont to wooshyppye heauen. To *Aquita*, a great towne in that *Giaponishe* kyngdome, we call *Gonano*, they muche resort for merchandysse, and the *Aquitanes* lyke wyse doe traueyle into theyr country, howbeit not often, for that there many of them are slayne by the inhabytters.

Muche more concernyng this matter I had to wyte, but to auoyde tediousnesse, I will come to speake of the *Giapans* man-  
The Giapans  
with Funerals.
 nesse agayne, who most desirous of dayne glory, doe thynke than specially to geat immortall fame, whan they procure them selues to bee most sumptuously and solempnely buryed, theyr burpalles and obsequies in the citie *Meaco*, are done after this maner. About one houre before the dead body be brought forth, a great multitude of his friendes, apparelled in theyr best aray, go before into the churche, with them goe theyr kyn women, and such as bee of theyr acquaintance, clothed in whyte (for that is the mourning colour there) with a chaungeable coloured bayle on theyr heades. The woman hath with her ass, accordyng to her abilitie, all her charytye tyred up in whyte like a coc-  
 LL  
 cadet

Lden. The decales.  
 Bancroft Library.





eado: the better sorte and wealthier women goe in letters of *Cedar*, artificially wrought, and richly dressed. In the seconde place marcheth a great company of footemen sumptuously apparelled. Then a far of commeth one of these *Bonzii*, maister of the ceremonies for that superstition, brauely clad in silkes & golde, in a large & high lpytter excellently wel wrought, accompanied with 30. other *Bonzii*, or thereabout, wearing hattes, linnen albes, and fyne blacke vpper garments. Then attired in ashe colour (for this colour also is mourning) with a long toych of pineaple, sheweth the dead body the way vnto the fyre, least it either stumble, or ignorantly goe out of the way. *Uelneare*. 200. *Bonzii* folow him singing the name of that deuill the which the partie deceassed chiefly did woo'ship by his life tyme, and therewithall a very great bafen is beaten, euen to the place of fyre. In need of a bel. Then folow two great paper baskets hanged open at staues cndes, full of paper roses diuersly coloured: such as beare them, doe march but slowly, shaking euer now & than their staues, that the aforesaid floures may fall doune by litle & litle, as it were droppes of rayne, and be whirled about with the wynd. This houre say they is an argument that the soule of the dead man is gone to *Paradyse*. After all this, eight beardles *Bonzii* orderly two and two dragge after them on the ground long speares, the pointes backwarde, with flagges of one cubite a peece, wherin the name also of that *Idole* is wrytten. Then be there carried ten *Lanternes* trimmed with the former inscription, ouercast with a fine bayle, and candelles burning in them. Besides this, two young men clothed in ashe colour, beare pineaple toyches, not lighted, of three foote length, the which toyches serue to kindle the fyre wherein the dead coppes is to be burnt. In the same colour folow many other that weare on the crownes of their heades sayre, litle, thersquare, blacke lychen caps, tied fast vnder their chyns (for *p* is honorable amdgst them) with papers on their heads, wherin the name of *p* deuill, *I* spake of, is wrytten. And to make it the moze solempne, after commeth a man with a table one cubite long, one foote broad, couered with a very fine whyte bayle, in both sides wherof is wrytten in golden letters the aforesaid name. At the length by foure men is brought forth the coppes sitting in a gorgeous lpytter, clothed in whyte, hanging doune his head, and holding his handes together like  
out



one that prayed: to the rest of his apparell may you adde an upper gowne of paper, witten full of that booke the which his God is sayd to haue made, when he liued in the world, by whose helpe, and merites commonly they doe thinke to bee saued. The dead man his children come next after him most gallantly set forth, the yongest wherof carrie:h lykewyse a pineaple torch to kindle the fyre. Last of all foloweth a great number of people in such cappes as I erst spake of.

When they are all come to the place appointed for the obsequie, all the *Bonzis* with the whole multitude, for the space of one hour, beating pannes & basens with great clamors, cal vpon the name of that deuitill, the which being ended, the obsequie is done in this maner. In the midst of a great quadrangle, rayled about, hanged with course hymen, and agreeably vnto the foure partes of the world, made with foure gates to goe in and out at, is digged a hole: in the hole is layde good stoe of wood, whereon is rayled gallantly a waued rooffe, before that stande two tables furnished with diuers kindes of meates, especially dry figges, Pomegranates, and cirtes good stoe, but neyther fyre nor fletcher: upon one of them standeth also a chaffre with coles, and in it sweete wood to make perfumes. When all this is ready, the corde wherewith the lytter was carried, is throuen by a long rope into the fyre: as many as are present stryue to take the rope in their handes, vsing theyr also sayd clamors, which done, they goe in procession as it were rounde about the quadrangle thysle. Then setting the lytter on the wood buylte vp ready for the fyre, that *Bonzis* who than is maister of the ceremonies, sayeth a verse that no bodie there vnderstandeth, whysling thysle about ouer his head a torche lyghted, to signifie thereby that the soule of the dead man had neyther any begynnynge, ne shall haue at any tyme an ende; and throtoweth away the torche. Two of the dead man his children, or of his neare kynne, take it by agayne, and standynge one at the East syde of the lytter, the other at the West, doe for honour and reuerence, reache it to eche other thysle ouer the dead corpes, and so cast it into the pyle of wood: by and by they throtow in ople, sweete wood, and other perfumes, accordynge as they haue plentie, and so with a great flame bynng the corpes to ashes: his children in the meane

Lii.

lypse

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



whyle putting sweete wood into the Chaffir at the table, with  
 whores, doe solemnely and religiously worshipp their father as  
 a Sainct: which being done, the *Bonzii* are payde eche one in  
 his degree. The matter of the ceremonies hath for his part fyue  
 ducates, sometimes ten, sometimes .xx. the rest haue ten *Julies* a  
 peece, or els a certayne number of other presentes called *Caxa*.  
 The meate that was ordeyned, as soone as the dead coppes  
 friendes and all the *Bonzii* are gone, is left for such as serued at  
 the obsequie, for the poore, and impotent lazars.

The next day returne to the place of obsequie the dead man  
 his chyldren, his kynred, and friendes, who gatheryng by his  
 ashes, bones, and teeth, doe put them in a gylded pottle, and so  
 carry them home, to be set by in the same pot couered with cloth,  
 in the mydd of theyr houses. Many *Bonzii* returne lykewise  
 to these private funeralles, and so doe they agayne the seuenth  
 day, than carry they out the ashes to bee buried in a place ap-  
 poynted, laying therevpon a fouresquare stone, wherin is  
 wrytten in great letters, drawen all the length of the stone ouer,  
 the name of that deuyll the which the dead man worshipped by  
 his lyfe tyme. Every day afterwarde his chyldren resorte vnto  
 that graue, with roses and warme water, that the deade coppes  
 shrill not. For the seuenth day onely, but the seuenth moneth,  
 and yere, within theyr owne houses they renue this obsequie,  
 to no small commodities and gayne of the *Bonzii*: great ryche  
 men doe spende in these theyr funeralles, 3000. ducates, or there  
 about, the meaner sorte two or thre hundred. Suche as for  
 pouertie be not able to go to that charges, are in the nyght tyme,  
 barkeloug without all pompe & ceremonies, buried in a dunghil.

They haue an other kynde of burfall, especially neare the  
 sea syde, for them that bee not yet deade. These felowes  
 are such, as hauyng religiously with much deuotion worshipped  
*Amida*, now desirous to see him, doe slaye them selues. And  
 first they go certayne dayes begging almes, the which they thrust  
 into theyr theues, than preache they in publyke a sermon vnto  
 the people, declaring what they mynd to doe, with the great good  
 lykynge of all suche as doe heare them: for every body wondereth  
 at such a kynd of holynesse. Than take they booke to cut downe  
 theyrs



hypers and choynes that myght hinder them in theyr way to heauen, and so imbarke them selues in a newe vessel, tyng great stoness about their neckes, armes, loynes, thighes, and fetter: thus they launchyng out into the mayne sea, be epyther drowned there, theyr thyppe bouged for that purpose, or els doe cast them selues ouer boorde headlong into the sea. The emptie barke is out of hande set a fyre, for honour sake, by theyr friendes that folowe them in an other boate of their owne, thynknyng it blasphemie that any mortal creature should afterward once touche the barke that had been so religiously halowed.

Truely whan we went to *Meaco*, epyght dayes before we came to the Isle of *Hiu*, at *Fore* towne, sixe men and two women so dyed. To all suche as dye so, the people erecteth a Chappell, and to eche of them a pyllar and a pole made of pinaple, for a perpetuall monument: hangyng by many sheddies of paper in stiches all the rooffe ouer, with many verses set downe in the walles, in commendation of that blessed company. Wherefoze vnto this place both day and nyght many come very superstitiously in pylgrimage. It happened euen then as *Aloisius Almeida* & I went to *Christen* a chyld, we traueyled that way, at what time foure or fiae olde women came foorth out of the aforesaide Chappel with beades in theyr handes (for in this pointe also the deuyll counterfayteth *Christianitie*) who partly scoyned at vs for folly, partly frowned and taunted at our small deuotion, for passing by that holy monument, without any reuerence or woozhypp done there vnto at all.

It remaineth nowe we speake two or thre woordes of those Sermons the *Bonzii* are wont to make, not so many as ours in number, but assuredly very wel prouided for. The *Pulpit* is erected in a great Temple with a silke Canapie ouer it, therein standeth a costly seate, before the seate a table with a bel & a booke. At the houre of sermon, eche secte of the *Giapans* resorteth to theyr owne doctours in diuers Temples. Up goeth the doctour into the *Pulpit*, and beyng set downe, after that he hath *Lordlyke* looked him about, signifieth silence with his bell, and so readeth a fewe woordes out of that booke we spake of, the which he expoundeth afterwarde moze at large. These preachers be for the most parte eloquent, and apte to brayne with their speach the myndes of their

Ll iii

hearers.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





## Of the Ilande

bearers. Therefore to this ende chiefly, suche is theyr greedy-  
 nesse, tendeth all theyr talke, that the people be brought vnder the  
 colour of godlinesse to enryche theyr monasteries, promplyng to  
 eche one so much the more happynesse in the lyfe to come, howe  
 much the greater costes & charges they be at in church matters &  
 obsequies: notwithstanding this multitude of superstitious sects  
 and companyes, and the diuersities therof amongst them selues:  
 yet in this principally all theyr superintendentes doe traueyle, so  
 to persuade theyr Duties in their owne tales and lyes, that they  
 thinke nothing els trueth, nothing els sure to come by euerlasting  
 saluaton, nothing els woorth the hearyng. Wherunto they adde  
 other subtilities, as in going, grauitie: in countenance, apparel,  
 and in all other outward shewe, comelynesse. Wherby the *Gia-*  
*panes* myndes are so noulled in wicked opinions, and doe con-  
 cepue thereby such trust and hope of euerlasting saluaton, that  
 not onely at home, but also abrode in every corner of the towne,  
 continually almost they runne ouer their beades, humbly asking  
 of *Amida* and *Xaca* wealth, honour, good health, and euerlastyng  
 ioyes. Thus than, deare brethren, may you thinke howe greatly  
 they neede the helpe of God, that epyther doe bring the Gospel in-  
 to this countrey, or receiuing it brought vnto them, do forsake *A-*  
*dolatry*, & ioyne them selues with Christ, being assailed by so ma-  
 ny snares of the deuil, troubled with the dayly dissuasions of their  
*Bonzii*, and finally so iniuriouly, so hardely, so sharply beyed of  
 their kindred and friendes, that except the grace of God obtey-  
 ned by the sacrifices and prayers of the Catholike church do help  
 vs, it can not be chosen, but that the fayth and constancie of many,  
 if not of all, in these first beginninges of our churches, will great-  
 ly be put in iopardie. So much the more it standeth you vppon,  
 that so earnestly long for the health of soules, so commende speci-  
 ally these *Giaponish* flockes vnto our Lorde.

We came to *Sacais*, the .xxviii. of January. *Aloy-*  
*sus Almeida* first for businesse, but afterwarde let by sicknesse,  
 layed there some whyle, but departing the next day from thence,  
 came thirtene leagues of, to *Macao* the last of January. Of my  
 coming all the Christians tooke great comfort, but specially  
*Gasper Vilela*, who in six yeeres had seene none of our company at  
*Macao*: his yeeres are not yet foure, but his gray beares shewe  
 him



him to bee seuentie, so vehemently is his litle body afflicted and  
woyne with extreme colde. He speaketh *Giapanish* so skilfully af-  
ter the phrase of *Moaco* (the which for the renowne of this peo-  
ple, and royall seat of the kyng is best accompted of) that he doth  
both confesse & preach in that language. Certayne godly bookes  
also he hath done into that speech, not omitting to translate other  
as leasure suffreth him. To make an end, our Lord for his good-  
nesse vouchsafe to p̄serue vs all continually, and to giue vs ayde  
both r̄ghly to interpret his wil, and well to do the same. From  
*Meaco* the .xix. of February. 1565.

Other suche lyke matter is handled both in other his letters,  
and also in the Epistles written by his companions, to be seene  
at large in the aforesayde volume. Amongst the rest this seemed  
in my iudgement one of the principall, and therefore the rather  
I tooke vpon me to doe it into Englyshe.

Of the Isles beyond Giapan, in the way from  
China to the Moluccas.



Amongst other Isles in the Asian sea, be-  
twixt *Cantan* a *Chinishe* haven in *Cathayo*,  
and the *Moluccas*, muche spoken of in the  
*Indish* histories, & paynted out in *Mappes*,  
*Ainan* and *Santlianus*, are very famous.

*Ainan* standeth nienetiene degrees on  
this syde of the Equinoctial lync neare *Chi-  
na*, from whence the *Chinishe* nation haue theyr prouision for  
shyping and other necessaries requisite for theyr Naue. There  
stayed *Baltasar Gagus*, a great traueyler, five monethes, who de-  
scribeth that place after this maner. *Ainan* is a goodly countrey,  
full of *Indish* frutes, and all kynde of victualles, besydes  
great store of *Iuelles* and pearle, well inhabited, the townes  
buylt of stone, the people rude in conditions, apperelled in  
diuersly coloured rugges, with two Ore boynes, as it were,  
made of fyne cypres hanging downe about theyr eares,  
and

*De reb.  
Iap. l. 4.*

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the Ilande

and a payre of sharpe cyzers at theyr foreheades.

The cause wherefore they goe in suche attyre, I could not vnderstande, except it be for that they doe counterfaiete the deuyll in the fourme of a byuite beast, offering to him vp them selues.

stianum.

*Santianum*, is an Isle neare vnto the haueu *Canton*, in the confines lykewyse of *China*, famous for the death of that woorthie trauepler, and godly professour, and paynefull doctor of the Indysh nation, in matters concerning religion, *Francis Xavier*, who after great labours, many iniuries, and calamities infinite suffred with much pacience, singular ioye and gladnesse of mynd, departed in a cabben made of bowes and tubes bypon a desarte mountayne, no lesse boyde of all worldly commodities, than endued with all spirituall blessings, out of this lyfe, the seconde day of December, the yeere of our Lorde. 1552. after that many thousandes of these Easterlynges were brought by him to the knowledge of Christ. Of this holy man, his perticular vertues, and specially traueple, and wonderfull workes in that region. of other many litle Isles, yet not so litle but that they may ryght well be written of at leasure, all the later histories of the Indysh regions are full.

FINIS.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



# Of the Northeast frostie Seas, and

kyngdoms lying that way, declared by the Duke of Moscouia his ambassadour, to a learned Gentleman of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius: likewise of the viages of that worthie old man Sebastian Cabote, sometymes gouernour of the companie of the Merchantes of Cathay, in the Citie of London.



**I**t is doubtlesse a maruelous thyng to consider what changes and alterations were caused in all the Romane Empyre by the Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbarians into Italy. For by their inuasions were extingwyshed all artes and sciences, and all trades of Merchandies that were used in dyuers partes of the worlde. The desolation and ignozaunce whiche ensued hereof, continued as it were a cloude of perpetuall darkenesse among men for the space of foure hundred yeeres and moze, insomuche that none durst aduenture to goe any whyther out of theyr owne native countreys: whereas before the incursions of the sayde Barbarians, when the Romane Empyre flourished, they myght safely passe the seas to all partes of East India, whiche was at that tyme as well known and frequented, as it is now by the nauigations of the Portugales. And that this is true, it is manifest by that whiche Strabo wytteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Tiberius. For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the cite of Alexandria in Egypt (gouerned then as a prouince of the Romanes) he wytteth this. This onely place of Egypt, is apte to receyue all thynges that come by sea, by reason of the commoditie of the hauen, and lykewyse all suche thynges as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus, whereby they may bee easely conueyed to Alexandria, being

The Romane Empyre.

4. hundred yeeres of ignozaunce.

East India well knowne in olde tyme.

Strabo.

The great ryche of Egypt.

The cite of Alexandria.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





**M**arvellous  
richesse.

**The** gouer-  
nance and  
reuenues of the  
Romanes.  
**Trogloditica.**  
and **India.**  
**The** gulfe of  
**Arabia.**

**Ethiops.**

**Rich** customs.

**The** richesse  
whiche were  
brought in  
the time from  
**India** and the  
redde sea.

**The** commis-  
sion of **Chempe-**  
**rours** **Marcus**  
and **Comod-**  
**us.**

by these commodities the richest citie of merchauntes that is in the worlde. The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that *Marcus Tullius* sayth in one of his orations, that kyng *Ptolemy*, surnamed *Auleta*, the father of queene *Cleopatra*, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundred talentes, whiche are seuen millions and a halfe of golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what might it then be woorth to the Romanes, by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of merchandies greatly increased by the traffike of *Trogloditica* and *India*; wheras in tyme past there coulde hardly be founde. xx. Shyppes togeather that durst enter into the gulfe of *Arabie*, or the we theyr prowesse without the mouth of the same. But at this present, great nauies sayle togeather into *India*, and to the furthest partes of *Ethiops*, from whence are brought many rich and pretious merchandies into Egypt, and are caried from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customs redoubled, aswel by such thynges as are brought thither, as also by suche as are carped from thence, forasmuche as great customes arple of thynges of great value. And that by this voyage infinite and pretious merchandies were brought from the redde sea and *India*, and thole of dyuers other sortes then are knownen in our tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe, wherein is described the commission of *Chemperrours*, *Marcus* and *Comodus*, with the rehearsall of al such stuffe and merchandies, wherof custome shoulde be payde in the redde sea, by suche as had the same in fee farme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces partaynyng to the *Romane Emperre*: and they are these folowynge.

**Cinamome.**  
**Long pepper.**  
**Whyte pepper.**  
**Cloues.**  
**Costus.**  
**Cancorna.**  
**Sylkenarde.**  
**Callia.**  
**Sweete perfumes**

**Ellocassa.**  
**Hy.**  
**Amome.**  
**Singer.**  
**Galabatum.**  
**Anumoniac.**  
**Galbane.**  
**Laffer.**  
**Agarthe.**

**Summe**



Gumme of Arabia.

Cardamome.

Filocinamome.

Carpello.

Spikes of diuers soyes.

Lymen cloth.

Skynnes and Furrer of Parthia and Babylon.

Iuorie.

Wood of Heben.

Precious stones.

Pearles.

Ieweltes of Sardonica.

Ceraunia.

Calamus Aromaticus.

Also that iuyce or liquor whiche is gathered of wood, and of the beare of the Indians.

Berlle.

Cilindro.

Blaues.

Cloth of Sarmatta.

The sylke called Metara.

Vestures of sylke.

Died cloth, and sylke.

Carbalei.

Sylke threede.

Selved men.

Poppingayes.

Lions of India.

Leopardes.

Panthers.

Purple.

By these wordes it doeth appeare, that in olde tyme the said navigation by the way of the red sea, was wel knowne, & muche frequented, & perhaps moze then it is at this present: Insomuch that the ancient kynges of Egypt, consydering the great profite of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and willing to make the same moze easie & commodious, attempted to make a fosse or chanel, which should begin in the last part of the said sea, where was a cite named *Arsinoe* (which perhappes is that that is nowe called *Suez*) and shoulde haue reached to a branch of the riuer of *Nilus*, named *Peluso*, whiche emptyeth it selfe in our sea towarde the East, about the cite of *Damiata*. They determined also to make three cauleys or hygh wayes by land, which shoulde passe from the sayd branch to the cite of *Arsinoe*: but they founde this too difficult to byng to passe. In fine, king *Ptolomeus* surnamed *Philadelphus*, ordeyned another way, as to sayle vppon *Nilus*, agaynst the course of the riuer, vnto the cite of *Copto*, and from thence to passe by a desert countrey, vntyl they come aboue the red sea, to a cite named *Berenice*, or *Misormo*, where they imbarked al their merchandise and wares for *India*, *Fibiope*, and *Arabie*, as appeareth by the wytyng first of *Strabo* (who wytyeth that he was in Egypt) and then by *Plinie*, who was in  
the

The great riches the kings of Egypt had by customes.

The noble enterpryses of the kings of Egypt  
*Arsinoe*.  
*Damiata*.  
*Peluso*.

*Nilus*.  
*Copto*.

*Berenice*.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the Northeast frosty sea

A nautigable  
trench made  
from Egypt to  
the red sea.

Lacus amari.

King Sesoſtre.

King Pſammis-  
ticus.

King Darius.

King Ptolom-  
eus.

The citie  
Heroum.

What Plinie  
writeth of the  
nautigable  
trench.

The largeneſſe  
and length of  
the trench.

the tyme of *Domitian*. *Strabo* alſo, ſpeaking of the ſaide ſolte of  
trench whiche was made towarde the redde ſea, wryteth thus,  
There is a trench that goeth towarde the red ſea; & the gulfe of  
*Arabie*, and to the citie of *Arſinoe*, whiche ſome call *Cleopatriada*,  
and paſſeth by the lakes named *Amari* (that is) bytter, becauſe  
in deede they were ſpytte bytter: but after that this trench was  
made, and the ryuer entred in, they became ſweete, and are at  
this preſent full of foules of the water, by reaſon of their pleaſan-  
neſſe. This trench was ſpytte begonne by king *Sefoſtre*, befoze  
the battaile of *Troy*. Some ſay that it was begonne by king  
*Pſammisicus*, while he was a childe, and that by reaſon of his  
death it was left imperfect: alſo, that afterwarde, king *Darius*  
ſucceeded in the ſame enterpriſe, who woulde haue finiſhed it, but  
yet brought it not to the ende, becauſe he was enſcourmed that the  
redde ſea was higher then *Egypt*, and that if this lande (diui-  
ding both the ſea) were opened, all *Egypt* ſhoulde be drow-  
ned thereby. King *Ptolomus* woulde in deede haue finiſhed it,  
but yet left it ſhut at the head, that he myght, when he woulde,  
ſayle to the other ſea, and returne without peryll. Here is the citie  
of *Arſinoe*, and neare vnto that, the citie called *Heroum*, in the vt-  
termoſt parte of the gulfe of *Arabie*, towarde *Egypt*, with many  
portes and habitations. *Plinie* likewiſe, ſpeaking of this trench,  
ſayth, In the furtheſt part of the gulfe of *Arabie*, is a port called  
*Danco*, from whence they determined to bypne a nautigable  
trench vnto the riuer of *Nilus*, whereas is the firſte *Delta*. Be-  
tweene the ſaide ſea and *Nilus*, there is a ſtreict of lande of the  
length of *lxii*. milles. The firſte that attempted this thing, was  
*Sefoſtre* king of *Egypt*, & after him *Darius* king of the *Persians*,  
whom *Ptolomus* folowed, who made a trench a hundred  
foote large, and thirtie foote deepe, being *CCC*. milles in  
length, vnto the lakes named *Amari*, and durſt proceede no fur-  
ther for feare of inundation, hauing knowledge that the red ſea  
was higher by three cubites then all the countrey of *Egypt*.  
Other ſay that this was not the cauſe: but, that he doubted  
that yf he ſhoulde haue let the ſea come any further, all the wa-  
ter of *Nilus* ſhoulde haue been thereby corrupted, whiche onely  
miniſtretch bynke to all *Egypt*. But notwithstanding, all  
theſe thinges afozeſayde, all this viage is frequented by lande  
from



from Egypt to the redde sea, in whiche passage are thre Causeyes or bygh wayes. The first begynneth at the mouth of Nilus, named Pelusio: All whiche way is by the landes, insomuche that if there were not certayne bygh Reedes first in the earth, to shew the ryght way, the Causey could not be found, by reason the wynde ever couereth it with sand. The seconde Causey is two myles from the mountayne Cassius: And this also in the ende of threescore myles, commeth vpon the way of Causey of Pelusius, inhabited with certayne Arabians, called Antei. The thyrde begynneth at Gerro, named Adipson: and passeth by the same Arabians, for the space of threescore miles, somewhat shorter, but full of rough mountaynes, and great scarcenesse of water. All these Causeyes, leade the way to the citie of Arsnoe, builded by Ptolomens Philadelphus in the gulfe Carandra by the redde sea. This Ptolomens was the first that searched all that part of the red sea, whiche is called Troglodica. Of this trench, described of Strabo and Plinie, there are seene certayne tokens remaining at this present, as they do affirme whiche haue been at Sues beyonde the citie of Akayr, otherwyle called Babylon in Egypt. But the merchantes that of later dayes traueyle this viage by lande, ryde through the drye and barren desertes, on Camels, both by day and by nyght, directyng theyr waye by the starres and compasse, as do martiners on the sea, and carryng with them water sufficient for many dayes loynes. The places of Arabia, and India, named of Strabo and Plinie, are the selfe same where the Portugales practyse theyr trade at this day, as the maners and customes of the Indians doo yet declare: for euen at this present their women use to burne them selues aluue with the dead bodies of their husbendes. Whiche thyng (as wytteth Strabo in his xv. booke) they dyd in olde time by a lawe, for this consideration, that sometyme being in loue with other, they forooke or poysoned their husbendes. And for as muche as accordyng to this custome, the olde Poet Propertius (wholy liued about an hundred yeres before the incarnation of Christ) hath in his booke made mention of the contention that was among the Indian women, whiche of them shoulde be burne aluue with theyr husbendes. I haue thought good to subscribe his verses, whiche are these.

The viage by land from Egypt to the red sea.

What byng Ptolomens discouered.

Meayse.

The viage to East India frequented in olde tyme. The customes and maners of the Indians.

Folio

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





Of the northeft frosty sea.

*Quas aurora suis rubra colorat equis,  
 Nonque ubi mortifero iacta est fax ultima lecto,  
 Vxorum fufus stat pia turba comis,  
 Et certamen habent letibi, que viua sequatur  
 Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.  
 Ardent victricesq; flammæ pectora præbent.  
 Imponuntque suis ora perusta viris.*

As touchyng these viages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thinges are wyrtten very largely by diuers autours, which I omit, because they parteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to Cathay by the north seas, and the coastes of Mosconia, discovered in our tyme by the viage of that excellent young man Rychard Chaunceller, no lesse learned in al mathematicall sciences, then an expert pilotte, in the yeere of our Lozde .155. As concernyng this viage, I haue thought good to declare by communicacion which was betweene the sayd learned man, *aleatius Butrigarius*, and that great philosopher and noble gentleman of Italie named *Hieronimus Fracastor*, as I fynd wyrtten in the Italian histories of navigations. As they were therefore conferrynge in matters of learnyng, and reasonyng of the science of Cosmographie, the sayd learned man, havyng in his hand an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oracion howe much the worlde was bound to the kinges of Portugale, rehearsing the noble factes done by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discovered, and howe by theyr navigations they made the whole worlde to hang in the ayre. He further declared of what partes of the ball, the earth remained yet undiscovered: and sayde, that of the landes of the inferiour hemispherie, or halfe compasse of the ball towarde the pole Antarticke, there was nothing knowne but that litle of the coaste of *Brasilis*, vnto the streight of *Mazellanus*: also a part of *Petur*: also a litle shoure. As like towarde the cape of *Bona Speranza*. Also that he marueyled without measure, that this thing was no better considered of Christian Princes, to whom God hath depured this charge, havyng ever on theyr consciences men of great learning, which may infortune them of this thing, being so marueylous and noble, whereby they may obtayne glory

The voyages to Cathay.

Rychard Chaunceller.

A learned discourse of divers voyages.

The voyages of the Portugales.

The worlde hanging in the ayre.

What is knowne of the lower hemispherie.

The lande of Brasilis.

Petur.

The charge and dutie of Christian Princes.

Note.

Eden. The decaloes.  
 Bancroft Library.



glory and fame by vertue, and be imputed among men as gods, by better demerites then euer were *Hercules* & great *Alexander*, who traueled onely into *India*: and that by making the men of this our Hemisphere knowne to them of the other halfe compasse of the ball beneathe vs, they myght by the tytle of this enterpryse, without comparison, farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by *Iulius Caesar*, or any other of the *Romane Emperours*. Whiche thyng they myght easly bying to passe, by assigning colonies to inhabite diuers places of that Hemisphere, in lyke maner as dyd the *Romanes* in prouinces newly subdued: whereby they myght not onely attayne great riches, but also enlarge the *Christian sayth* and *Empire*, to the glory of *God*, and confusion of *infidels*. After this, he spake of the *Ilande of Saint Laurence*, called in olde tyme *Madagascar*, whiche is greater then the realme of *Castile* and *Portugale*, and reacheth from the .xii. degree toward the *Pole Antarkt*, vnto the .xxvi. degree and a halfe, lying Northeast from the cape of *Bona Speranza*, and partly vnder the lyne of *Tropicus Capricorni*, beyng wel inhabited, and of temperate ayre, with abundance of all thynges necessary for the lyfe of man, and one of the moste excellent *Ilandes* that is founde this day in the worlde: And that neuertheless there is nothing knowen thereof, except onely a fewe small *Hauens* by the sea syde, as the lyke ignorance remaineth of the greatest part of the *Ilandes of Taprobana*, *Ciana*, the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynnyng to speake of the partes of our *Pole*, he caused the booke of *Plinio* to be brought hym, where diligently pondering the .xxiii. Chapter of the seconde booke, he founde where he rehearseth the historie of *Cornelius Nepos*; by these wordes: That in his tyme one *Eudorus* escappng the handes of kynge *Lathyrus*, departed from the gulfe of *Arabie*, and came by sea to the *Ilande of Calese*: Declaryng further, that whereas this narration was manye yeeres reputed for a fable, was nowe in our tyme, by the vertue of the *Portugales*, knowen to be true: And that lykewyse the same *Cornelius Nepos* reciteth, that at the tyme when *Quintus Metellus Celer* was *Proconsul* of *Leuentenant* for the *Romanes* in *Fraunce*, the kynge of *Sueda* gaue hym certayne *Indians*, whiche sayling out of *India* by *Myndanile*,

*Hercules* and  
*Alexander*.

The colonies of  
the *Romanes*  
in regions sub-  
dued.

The great *I-*  
lande of *Saint*  
*Laurence* or  
*Madagascar*.

The *Ilandes* of  
*Taprobana* or  
*Ciana*.  
*Plinio*.

The historie of  
*Cornelius* *Nepos*.

Shippes of *India*  
druen into  
the sea of *Cer-*  
*manie*.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



did there by tempest tyuen to the coastes of Germanie. When  
 he had redde these wordes, he proceeded, saying that the same  
 thing myght be verified nowe in our tyme, if the princes which  
 confine bypon that sea woulde endeuoure theyr industry and vi-  
 gilence to byping it to passe : and that there coulde not any na-  
 uigation be imagined so commodious and profitable to all Chri-  
 stendom as this way might be, if by this voyage should be found  
 open to India, to come to the ryche country of *Cashay*, whiche  
 was discovered nowe two hundred yeres since by *Marcus Pau-  
 lus*. Then takyng the globe in his hande, he made demon-  
 stration that this voyage shoulde bee very shorte, in respect of  
 that which the *Portugales* nowe folowe, and also of that which  
 the *Spanyarde*s may attempt, to the *Landes of Molucca*.  
 He declared furthermore, that the cite of *Zabyk*, beyng ryche  
 and of great power, and situate bypon the sea of Germanie, and  
 also accustomed with continual navigations to trauayle the  
 sea of *Norway* and *Goeblande*, and lykewyse the ryght noble  
 kyng of *Polonie*, whose dominions, with his realme of *Litania*,  
 extende to the saide sea, shoulde be apte to discover this secret.  
 But that aboute al other, the Duke of *Mosconia*, should yet  
 fourme the same, with greater commoditie, & more facilitie then  
 any other Prince. And here stayng a while, he began to speake  
 againe, and said. Nowe, soasmuch as we are come to this passe,  
 me thinke it shoulde seme a great discurtie if I should not shew  
 you al that I knowe, as touching this viage, whereof I greatly  
 mused with my selfe many yeres by occasion of the wordes of  
*Plinie*. Whereas therefore, beyng a young man, I was in Ger-  
 manie in the cite of *Augusta*, it so chanced that in those dayes  
 there came thither an ambassadour of the Duke of *Mosconia*, a  
 man singularly learned both in the Greeke tongue & the Latine,  
 and of good experience in wordely thynges, hauing been sent to  
 dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counsaile. Of  
 whose learning beyng aduertised, I sought his acquaintaunce,  
 and talkyng with hym one daye of these *Indians*, tyuen by  
 fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the viage that  
 myght be discovered by the North sea to the *Landes of Spices*,  
 I perceyued that at the first he was myled exceedingly, as at  
 a byping that he coulde neuer haue imagined. But resting a  
 while

An enterpryse  
 by the Prince  
 was may be  
 tayne true  
 same and  
 glory.  
 Cashay disco-  
 uered by *Mar-  
 cus Paulus*.

The cite of  
*Zabyk*.

The kyng of  
*Polonie*.

The Duke of  
*Mosconia*.

An ambassa-  
 dour from the  
 Duke of *Mos-  
 conia*.



whyle in maner astonyshe in his secrete phantasie, hee tooke great pleasure therein, and sayde: forasmuch as the Portugales haue now compassed about all the South partes, supposed in old tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate, why should we not certaynely thynke that the lyke may bee done about this parte of the North, without feare of colde, especially to men borne and brought vp in that climate: Yet proceeding further, he sayde, that if his Prince and maister had men that would animate him to discover this vyage, there was no Prince in Christendome that myght doe it with more facilitie. Then calling for a Mappe, in which was the discription of Moscouia, and the prouinces subiect to the same, hee declared that from the cite of Moscouia or Mosca, goyng towarde the Northeast for the space of 11. myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda, and afterwarde by that, and folowynge the course thereof, to the cite of Vsting, so called, bycause the ryuer of Ing falleth into the ryuer of Succana, where they lose theyr owne names, and make the great ryuer Quina, and by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the cite of Colmogor, they sayle vnto the North Ocean. The which way, although it bee a long tracte, as more then 800. myles, neuerthelesse he sayd that in sommer it myght comodiously be sayled. And that whereas it falleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly trees, apte to make shyppes, and the place so conuenient for this purpose, that shypwryghtes and other skylfull workemen for all thinges beere vnto apperteynyng, may easily come out of Germanie: also, that the men which are bled to traueyle the sea of Germanie about the coastes of Gothlande, should bee best and most apte to attempt this enterpryse, bycause they are indurate to abyde colde, hunger, and labour. He sayde furthermore, that in the court of his Prince, they haue muche knowledge of the great Cam of Cathay, by reason of the continuall warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest parte gyue obedience to the sayd great Cam, as to theyr chiefe Emperour. He made also demonstration in the sayde carde by the Northeast, that being past the prouince of Permia, and the ryuer Pescora (which falleth into the North sea) & certeine mountaines named Catena Mundi, there is the entrance into the prouince of Obdora, whereas is Pecchiadoro, and the ryuer Obo, whiche also

The woodes of the Ambass labour of Moscouia.

The way from Moscouia to the North Ocean & Cathay

Molochda, Vsting, Ing, Succana, Quina, Colmogor, The North Ocean.

Great woods.

Gothlande,

The Moscouites haue knowledge of the great Cam of Cathay. Permia, Pescora, Catena mundi, Obdora, Pecchiadoro, Obo.

¶m.i.

falleth

Eden. The Decales. Bancroft Library.





falleth into the sayde sea, and it is the furthest border of  
 Thempyre of the Prince of Holcouia. The sayde ryuer hath his  
 originall in a great lake called *Chetbai*, which is the fyrst habita-  
 tion of the *Tartars*, that paye tribute to the great Cane. And  
 from this lake for the space of two moneths byage (as they were  
 credyby informed by certayne *Tartares* taken in the warren) is  
 the most noble cite of *Cambala*, beyng one of the chiefest in the  
 dominion of the great Cane, whom some call the great Cham.  
 He also affirmed, that if shippes should be made on the coastes  
 of the sayde sea, and sayle on the backe halfe of the coast thereof  
 (which he knew by many relations made to his Prince, to reach  
 infinitely towarde the Northeast) they should doublesse in fo-  
 lowyng the same, easily discover that countrey. Unto these  
 woordes he added, that although there were great difficultie in  
 Holcouia, by reason that the way to the sayde sea is full of thicke  
 woods and waters, whiche in the sommer make great mary-  
 shes, and impossible to be traueyled, as well for lacke of victuals,  
 whiche can not there be founde, not for certayne dayes, but for  
 the space of certayne monethes, the place beyng so solate with-  
 out inhabitantes: neuerthelesse he sayde, that if there were with  
 his Prince, onely two Spanyarden or Portugales, to whom  
 the charge of this viage should be committed, he no wayes doub-  
 ted but that they would folowe it, and synde it, so as in much as with  
 great ingeniousnesse and inestimable patience, these nations  
 haue overcome much greater difficulties then are these, whiche  
 are but litle in comparision to those that they haue ouerpasse, and  
 doe ouerpasse in all their viages to India. He proceeded, decla-  
 ryng that not many yeeres since, there came to the courte of his  
 Prince, an Ambassatour from pope *Leo*, named matter *Paulo*  
*Centurione*, a Genuese, under byuers pretenses. But the princy-  
 pall occasion of his commyng, was, because hee had conceived  
 great indignation and hatred agaynst the Portugales: And ther-  
 fore intended to proue if he could open any byage by land, wher-  
 by spyes myght be brought from India by the lande of *Tar-*  
*taria*, or by the sea *Caspium* (otherwyle called *Hircanum*) to *Hol-*  
*couia*, and from thence to be brought in shippes by the ryuer  
*Riga*, which runnyng by the countrey of *Linonia* falleth into the  
 sea of Germanie: And that his Prince gaue eare vnto him, and  
 cauled

The lake Ches-  
 chap  
 The Tartars.

The cite of  
 Cambala.

Note this sea  
 sette.

Difficultie tra-  
 ueplyng in  
 Holcouia.

Commendati-  
 on of the Spa-  
 nyarden and  
 Portugales.

The bystoie of  
 Paulus Cen-  
 turio.

Of this reade  
 more at large  
 in the booke of  
 Paulus Ho-  
 mius.

Malice may  
 doe more with  
 some then  
 becom.

The Caspian  
 sea.  
 Riga.  
 Anonia.



caused the sayde voyage to be attempted by certaine noble men of  
 Lords, of the *Carters* consynng next unto him. But the waeres  
 which were then betweene them, and the great defertes which  
 they should of necessitie ourpasse, made them leaue of theyr  
 enterpryse: whiche if it had ben purposed by the coastes of this  
 our North sea, it might haue been easily synysed. The sayde  
 Ambassaour continued his narration, saying that no man ought  
 to doubt of that sea, but that it may be sayled sxe monethes in  
 the yeere, soasmuche as the dayes are then very long in that  
 tyme, and hot, by reason of continuall reuerberation of the bea-  
 mes of the Sunne, and shorthe nyghtes: And that this thing were  
 as well woorthie to bee pproved, as anye other navigation,  
 whereby many partes of the worlde, heeretofore unknowen, haue  
 been discovered and brought to ciuillite. And heere making an  
 ende of this talke, he sayde: Let vs now omitt this parte of *Po-  
 couta* with his colde, and speake somewhat of that parte of the  
 newe worlde, in whiche is the lande of *Bytton*, called *Terra Bri-  
 tomum*, and *Baccaleos*, or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yeere  
 1534. and 1535. *Iaques Cartier*, in two voyages made wth three  
 great French Gallies, founde the great and large countreys na-  
 med *Canada*, *Ochelaga*, and *Sanguenai*: which reach from the 50.  
 to the 51. degree, beyng well inhabited, and pleasaunt countreys,  
 and named by him *Noua Francia*. And here staying a while, and  
 hysyng by his handes, he sayde, Oh what doe the Christian prin-  
 ces meane, that in suche landes discovered, they doe not assigne  
 certayne colonies to inhabite the same, to byng those people  
 (whom God hath so blessed with naturall giftes) to better ciuili-  
 tie, and to embrace our religion, then the whiche, nothing can bee  
 more acceptable to God: The sayd regions also, beyng so fayre  
 and frutfull, with plentie of all sortes of cozne, hearbes, frutes,  
 wood, spyces, beastes, metals, and ryuers of suche greatnesse  
 that theyppes may sayle more then 180. myles upon one of them,  
 beyng on both sydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the go-  
 uernours of the sayde colonies to searche whether that lande to-  
 wards the North, named *Terra de Labrador*, doe loyne as one  
 firme lande with *Northway*: Or whether there bee any streight  
 or open place of sea, as is most lyke there should be, soasmuch as  
 it is to bee thought that the sayde Indians, byuen by fortune

Sp.ii.

about

The Carters  
 of Hilde,  
 Defertes.  
 The voyage by  
 the North sea.

The woorthie-  
 nesse of this  
 voyage.

The voyages of  
 the French  
 men to the  
 lande of *Bac-  
 calaog*.

Pleasaunt  
 countreys,  
 Noua Francia,  
 Apocryphe  
 to the *Christis-  
 an Princes*.

Great ryuers,  
 in this voy-  
 age to be sear-  
 ched.

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



The way to Cathay and the Ilandes of Molucca by the North west. A notable enterpryse. The noble enterpryse of Antonie di Mendosza, vicetoy of Mexico.

The discoverie of the North west partes.

Shippes sayling from Cathay by the North West boream sea, to the coastes of the North west parte of the lande of Baccaleros, Cathay.

The sea from newe France to Cathay.

A notable booke.

about the coastes of Norway, came by that streight of sea, to the coastes of Germanie, and by the sayde streight to sayle north west, to discover the landes and countreys of Cathay, and from thence to sayle to the Ilandes of Molucca, and these surely should bee enterpryses able to make men immortall. The which thing, that ryght woorthie Gentleman maister Antony di Mendosza considering, by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in him, attempted to put this thyng in practyse. For being vicetoy of the countrey of Mexico (so named of the great citie Mexico, otherwyle called *Temistitan*, now called newe Spayne, being in the .xx. degree about the Equinoctiall, and parte of the sayde firme lande) he sent certeyne of his Captaynes by lande, and also a nauie of shippes by sea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in the Emperours court, I saw his letter wyrtten in the yere. 1541, and dated from Mexico: wherein was declared howe towarde the North west, he had founde the kyngdome of *Sette Citia* (that is) seven Cities, whereas is that, called *Ciuola*, by the reuerende father *Marco da Niza*: and howe beyonde the sayde kyngdome yet further towarde the North west, Captayne *Francesco Vasques* of *Coronado* hauing ouerpassed great desertes, came to the sea syde, where he founde certayne shippes which sayled by that sea with merchandises, and had in theyr banner bypon the prooes of theyr shippes, certayne foules made of golde and siluer, which they of Mexico call *Alcatraz*, and that theyr martiners shewed by signes that they were .xx. dayes sayling, in comyng to that haven: wherby he vnderstoode that these shippes could be of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discovered. The sayd maister Antonie wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discovered so great a space of that countrey vnto the sayde sea, that it passed .950. leagues, whiche make .2850. myles. And doubtlesse if the Frenche men, in this theyr newe France, would haue passed by lande toward the sayd North west and by North, they should also haue founde the sea wherby they myght haue sayled to Cathay. But about all thynges, this seemed vnto me most woorthie of commendation, that the sayde maister Antonie wrote in his letter, that he had made a booke of all the naturall

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



and marueylous thinges whiche they sounde in searchyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes, and altitudes of degrees: A woꝝke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynd, wherby we may conceiue that if God had giuen him the charge of the other hemispherie, he would or now haue made it better knowen to vs. The which thing I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this tyme: beyng neuerthelesse the greatest and most gloriouse enterpryse that may be imagined.

A great and  
glorious en-  
terpryse.

And heere making a certayne pause, and turnyng him selfe towarde vs, hee sayde, Doe you not vnderstande to this purpose, howe to passe to India towarde the Northwest wynde, as dyd of late a citizen of Venece, so valiant a man, and so well practised in all thinges perteynyng to nauigations, and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present hee hath not his lyke in Spayne, insomuche that for his vertues hee is preferred aboue all other pylottes that sayle to the West Indies, who may not passe thither without his lycence, and is therefore called *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when we sayde that wee knewe him not, hee proceeded, saying, that beyng certayne yeeres in the citie of Siuile, and desirous to haue some knowledg of the nauigations of the Spanyarde, it was tolde him that there was in the citie a valiant man, a Venetian boine, named *Sebastian Cabote*, who had the charge of those thinges, beyng an expert man in that science, and one that could make cardes for the sea with his owne hande: and that by this repozte, seekyng his acquayntaunce, hee founde him a very gentle person, who enterteined him friendly, and shewed him many thinges, and among other a large Mappe of the worlde, with certayne perticular nauigations, as well of the Portugales as of the Spanyarde: and that hee spake further vnto him, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venece, many yeeres since, to dwell in Englande, to solowe the trade of merchandyses, hee tooke mee with him to the citie of London, whyle I was very young, yet hauing neuerthelesse some knowledg of letters of humanitie, and of the sphere. And when my father dyed, in that tyme when newes were brought that *Don Christopher Columbus Genuese*, had discovered the coasts of India, wherof was great talke in all the court of kyng Henry the seventh,

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylote of the West Indies.

Commentari-  
on of Sebastia-  
an Cabote.  
Sebastian Cabote tolde me that he was boine in Wyppow, & that at .iiii. yeeres olde he was carped with his father to Venice, and so returned as Capne into England with his father after certayne yeeres: wherby he was thought to haue ben boine in Venice.

¶ Item iii.

wha

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





who then reigued : insomuche that all men with great admira-  
tion affirmed it to be a thing moze diuine then humane, to sayle  
by the West into the East where sypces growe, by a way that  
was neuer knowen before . By which same and report, there  
increased in my harte a great flame of desyre to attempte some  
notable thynge . And understanding by reason of the sphere,  
that if I should sayle by the way of the Northwest wynde, I  
should by a shorter tracte come to India, I thereupon cau-  
led the kyng to bee aduertised of my diuise : who immediately  
commaunded two Carauels to be furnished with all thinges ap-  
perteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in  
the yeere. 1496. in the begynnynge of sommer. Beginning there-  
fore to sayle toward Northwest, not thinking to fynde any other  
lande then that of *Cathay*, and from thence to turne toward In-  
dia . But after certayne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne  
towards the North, which was to me a great displeasure . Ac-  
uerthelesse, saylyng along by the coast, to see if I could fynde any  
gulfes that turned, I founde the lande styll continet to the. 56.  
degree vnder our pole : And seeing that there the coast turned  
toward the East, dispaynyng to fynde the passage, I turned backe  
agayne, and sayled downe by the coast of that lande towards the  
Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the sayde passage to In-  
dia) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe  
called *Florida* . Where, my vicualles saylyng, I departed  
from thence, and returned into Englande, where I founde great  
tumultes among the people, and pparance for warres in Scot-  
lande : by reason whereof, there was no moze consideration had  
to this vyage. Whereupon I went into Spayne, to the Catho-  
lyke kyng, and queene Elizabeth : who beyng aduertised what  
I had done, enterteined mee, and at theyr charges furnished  
certayne shippes wherewith they caused mee to sayle to disco-  
uer the coastes of *Brasile*, where I founde an exceedyng great  
and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is)  
the ryuer of siluer, into the whiche I sayled, and folowed it into  
the firme lande moze then sixe hundred leagues, syndyng it eue-  
ry where very sayze and inhabited with infinite people, whiche  
with admiration came rumpng dayly to our shippes . Into this  
ryuer, runne somany other riuers, that it is in maner incredible.  
After

The first vy-  
age of Sebasto  
an Cabote.

The lande of  
Florida.

The seconde  
vyage of Cab-  
ote to the land  
of Brasile, and  
Rio della  
Plata.

Cabote tolde  
me that in a re-  
gion within  
this ryuer he  
found. 50.  
grapes of

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



After this, I made many other voyages, which I now permit. And weeping olde, I gave my selfe to rest from suche traucyles, because there are now many young and lusty Pilotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doe reioyce in the fruites of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as you see. And this is as muche as I haue vnderstoode of maister *Sebastian Cabote*, as I haue gathered out of vniuers nauigations written in the Italian tongue.

whete in September, and gathered there of. 50. thousande in Desember, as will test also Francisco Lopez.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe *Holcouia* was in our tyme discovered by *Richard Chancellor* in his voyage toward *Cashay*, by the direction and information of the sayd maister *Sebastian*, who long before had this secreete in his mynd, I shall not neede heere to describe that voyage, forasmuche as the same is largely and faythfully written in the Latine tongue by that learned young man *Clement Adams*, schoolemaister to the *Queenes* *Henshemmen*, as he receyued it at the mouth of the sayd *Richard Chancellor*. Neuerthelesse, I haue thought good heere to speake somewhat of *Holcouia*, as I haue redde in the booke of *John Faber*, written in the Latine tongue, to the ryght noble *Prince Ferdinando*, Archduke of *Austria*, and Infante of *Spayne*, of the maners and religion of the *Holcouites*, as he was partly instructed by the Ambassadors of the Duke of *Holcouie*, sent into *Spayne* to *Chemperours* maiestic, in the yere, 1525. He wyrteth therefore as foloweth.

The viage to *Holcouia*.

The history of *Holcouia*.

I thinke it first conuenient to speake somewhat of the name of this region whereby it is called at this day, and howe it was called in olde tyme. Conferryng therefore the moste auncient of the Greeke and Latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceyue it to bee a thing which requirerth no small iudgement of wyte and learnyng. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thinges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day we commonly call *Holcouites*, were in tyme past (as wynteth *Plinie*) called *Roxolani*, whom neuerthelesse by chaungyng one letter, *Ptolome* in his ryght table of *Europe*, calleth *Rosolanos*; as doeth also *Strabo*. They were also many yeres called *Rasbini*; and are that people which sometyme fought manfully agaynst the *Captaynes*

The vniuers names of *Holcouia*.

*Roxolani*, *Rosolani*, *Rasbini*,

*Im.iii.*

of

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the Northeaft frostie sea,

of *Metbridates*, as *Strabo* writeth. They were called *Polcoutes*, of the chiefe citie of all the prouince, named *Moscouia* or *Mosca*: or (as *Volaterane* sayeth) of the rpuer *Mosco*. They were sometime gouerned by Duke *John*, whose wyfe was *Helena*, of the lynage of *Chemperours* of *Constantinople*, of the noble familie of the *Palcologi*. Beyond these *Roxolanos*, *Strabo* sayeth there is no lande inhabited. These *Ruthenians* therfore or *Polcoutes*, are people of the Northeaft parte of the worlde from vs, and are determined with the limittes of the great rpuer *Boristhenes* of *Scythia*; on the one syde with the *Lituanians* and *Poloniens*; and on the other syde with the *Tartars*, who ceasse not to beze them with continuall warres and incursions: Especially the great *Emperour Cham* of *Cathay*, the chiefe Prince of the *Tartars*, resydent by the sea syde in *Taurico Chersoneso*, molesteth them with soze warres. They are towarde the North syde inclosed with the frosen sea, the lande of whose coastes being very large, pertyneth in maner all to the dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*. The sea is it whiche the olde wypters call *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke woord *Cronos*, which the Latines call *Saturnus*, whom they sayne to be an olde man, of complexion colde and slowe, and thereby name all suche thinges as are colde and slowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they byd this North sea, which being in maner euer frosen, is slow and cold, and in maner immoueable. And for lyke consideration (as sayth *Plinie*) *Heathens* nameth it in the *Scythian* tongue, *Amaltheum*, which woord signifieth as much as congealed or frosen. But that I wander not farre from my purpose: *Chempyre* and dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*, reacheth so farre, that it comprehendeth certayne partes of *Asia*, and all of *Europe*. The citie of *Moscouia* or *Mosco*, is counted twyfe as byg as *Colonia Agrippina*, as they saythfully repute which knowe both. Unto this they haue also an other, not vnequall in bygnesse, called *Fladimer*. Also *Blesconia*, *Nonogradia*, *Smolne*, and *Orifer*, all which, they *Ambassadours* asseyme to be of princely and magnificall buytoynges, and strongly defended with walles both of bylike and square stone. Of these, *Blesconia* is strongest, and emunroned with thre walles. Other whiche they haue innumerable, are not so famous as are these wherof this Duke of *Moscouie* and

The rpuer Mosco.

The rpuer Boristhenes.

The rpuer of Cathay.

The frosen sea.

Laacus Cronicus. Saturnus.

Amaltheum.

The dominion of the Duke of Moscouia.

The citie of Moscouia. The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



and Emperoure of Russia taketh the inscription of his title. For  
 euen at this present, when so euer, eyther by his ambassadours  
 or his letters, he doth signifie hym selfe to be Emperour of  
 Moscouie, he is accustomed to vse this title, *Basilius* by the  
 grace of God Emperour of all Russia, and great Duke of *Flad-  
 mer, Moscouie, Nouigrade, Blasconia, Smolue, and Otifer.* &c.  
 And this is the tytle whereby the sayde ambassadours saluted  
 your maiestie in the name of great *Basilius* when they began  
 theyr oration. This prince of *Moscouie*, hath vnder hym  
 princes of many prouinces, and those of great power: Of the  
 whiche, that olde wyghte bearded man, whom this Emperour of  
 the *Ruthians*, sent for his ambassadoure to the Emperours ma-  
 iestie into *Spaine*, is not one of the least. For euen he, when ne-  
 cessitie of warre requireth, is accustomed to make for his Em-  
 perour a bande of .xxx. thousand hoysenmen. But this is to their  
 singular commendation, that they are so obedient to theyr prince  
 in all thynges, that beyng summoned by hym by neuer so meane  
 an heralde, they obey incontinent, as if it were to god, thynk-  
 ing nothing moze glorious then to die in y<sup>e</sup> quarrel of theyr prince.  
 By reason of which obedience, they are able, in thort tyme, to as-  
 semble an army of two or thzee hundred thousande men against  
 theyr enemies, eyther the *Tartares*, or the great *Cham*.  
 And haue hereby obtayned great victories and triumphes, as well  
 agaynst the *Turks*, as the *Tartars*, by the exceeding multitude of  
 theyr hoysenmen, and continual experience in warres. At such time  
 as the Emperour *Maximilian* made a league with them, they kept  
 warre against the kyng of *Polonie*. They vse not onely bowes  
 and darters, after the maner of the *Parthians*, but haue also the  
 vse of gunnes as we haue. And to be bytise, only the *Moscouites*  
 may seeme that nation which hath not felte the commodities of  
 peace: Insomuch that if theyr region were not strongly descri-  
 bed by the nature of the place, beyng impregnable, it had or now  
 been oftentimes conquered. Theyr language agreeth muche  
 with the tongue of y<sup>e</sup> *Bobemians, Croatians, and Sclauons*: so that  
 the *Sclauon* doth playnely vnderstande the *Moscouite*, although  
 the *Moscouian* tongue be a moze rude and hard phrase of speech.  
 The historiographers wyte that the *Sclauons* tongue tooke  
 the name of the confusion whiche was in *Babell* in the tyme  
 of

The Duke of  
 Moscouia &  
 Emperour of  
 Russia.  
 The Duke of  
 Moscouia his  
 tytle.

Duke Basilius.

Theyr power.

Theyr obedie-  
 nce to theyr  
 prince.

Theyr warres  
 & conquestes.

Gunnes.  
 Only the *Mos-  
 couites* haue  
 not felte the  
 commodities  
 of peace.

Theyr lan-  
 guage.

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.





Of the Northeast frosty sea

Dalmatia.

Pannonia.  
Hungaris.

Their original.

The Declation  
tongue teach  
eth farre.

Great woods,  
white beares  
and blacke  
woolues.  
Abundance of  
hony and  
waxe.

Apch fures.

Their maner  
of bargaining.

Rude & wilde  
people.

Cartarps.

of that stoute hunter *Nemrob*, of whom mention is made in the *Genesis*. But I can not enough marueyle at this chyng, that whereas betwene *Dalmatia* (nowe called *Sclanonia*) and *Moscovia*, both the *Pannonies* are situate, yet this notwithstanding, the *Hungarians* tongue nochyng agreeth with the *Moscouites*. Whereby we may coniecture that these nations were sometymes diuided by legions, and that they came out of *Dalmatia* thither: whiche chyng also *Volateranus* affirmeth, saying that the language of the *Ruthenians* (whiche are the *Moscouites*) is *Semidalmatica* (that is, halfe *Sclanone*) Nowe so euer it be, this is certaine, that the *Bobemians*, *Croations*, *Sclanons*, & *Moscouites*, agree in language, as we perceiued by thinterpretours whiche your maiestie had then in your court. For whereas the sayd interpetours were bozne among the *Croations* & *Sclanons*, and none of them had euer been in *Moscovia*, so before that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet byd they well vnderstande the ambassadours woordes. There are in *Moscovia*, wooddes of exceeding byggenesse, in the whiche blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause wherof may bee thextreme colde of the North, whiche doth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the mocher of whitenesse, as the *Philosophers* affirme. They haue also great plentie of Bees, wherby they haue such abundance of hony and waxe, that it is with them of small price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of long warres, their chiefe aduantage wherby they haue all chynges necessarie towarde theyr lyuynge, is the gaynes whiche they haue by theyr ryche fures, as *Sables*, *Parternes*, *Luzernes*, mott white *Armins*, and such ocher, whiche they sell to merchauntes of ouers countreys. They bye and sell with simple sayth of woordes, exchanging waxe for waxe, without any curious bordes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer mynes, yet do they for the moste part, exchanging theyr fures for frutes, and ocher thyngs necessarie to mainteine their life. There are also some people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyue only by fische and mylke, as do the wilde *Tatars* theyr borderers, which dwell in woods by the coastes of the frozen sea. These people are *hyustiche*,  
and



and lyue in maner lyke wyld beasts. But they of the cite of *Mosca* and *Novigrade*, and other cities, are ciuile people, and agree with vs in eating of fysh and fleshe, although they maner of coquerie is in many thynges differing from ours. *Volaterane* wytteth that the *Rusbenians* vse money vncoyned. And enquiring further, I was infourmed that the money of *Hungary* is much currant with them. But this is cheeflye to be considered, that they embrace the Christian faith, whiche they affirme to haue been preached to them first by *Saint Andrew* the Apostle, and by other to *Simon Peter*. Suche doctrine also as vnder *Constantine* the great, in the yere. CCC. xliii. was concluded in the first generall counsaile holden in the cite of *Nicene* in *Bethynia*, and there determined by. CCC. xliii. Bishops, and also suche as hath been wyttten and taught by the Greeke Doctors *Basilus Magnus* and *Chysostronus*, they beleue to be so holy, fyne, and sincere, that they thynke it no moze lawfull one heare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the Gospell of *Christ*. For they constancie and modestie is suche, that no man dare call those thynges into question whiche haue once been decised by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They do therfore with a moze constant mynde perseuer in theyr first faith, whiche they receiued of *Saint Andrew* thapostle, and his successoure and holy fathers, then do many of vs, beyng diuided into sectes and sectes, whiche thing neuer chaunceth among them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touching the faith or custome of religion, all is referred to the Archebishop and other bishops, as to be defined by theyr spirite: not permytting any iudgement to the inconstant and ignoraunt people. Their Archbishop is resident in the cite of *Mosca*, where also the Emperour keepeth his court. They haue lykewyse diuers other Bishops: as one in *Novigradia*, where also *Isodorus* was Bishop vnder pope *Eugenius*. They haue an other in *Roscina*, an other in *Sustali*, an other in *Otiferi*: also in *Smolme*, in *Resan*, in *Column*, and in *Volus*, all whiche haue theyr Dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebishop as the cheefe. Before the patriarke of *Constantinople* was oppressed by the tyranny of the *Turkes*, this Archebishop recognised hym as his superior: Insomuche that this Duke of *Moscovia*, and Emperour

Ciuile people  
in ciues.

Theyr money.

They embrace  
the Christian  
faith whiche  
they receiued of  
the Apostles.

The counsaile  
of Nicene.  
*Basilus  
Magnus.  
Chysostronus.*

Their constan-  
cie in theyr res-  
ligion.

The bishops de-  
fine controuer-  
ses in religion.

Their bishops.

The Archbis-  
hop.  
The patriarke  
of constantino-  
ple.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the Northeast frosty sea

perour of *Russia*, not vnmyndful herof, but a diligent obseruer of his accustomed religion, doth at this waye yearly sende a certayne tynne, in maner of almes, to the Patriarke of *Constantinople*, that he may with moze quiet mynde looke for the ende of this his *Egyptian* seruitude, wchyl it shal please almighty God to redde hym to his former church and anochytle. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shoulde notwe forsaue hym whose predecessors haue ruled and governed so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prouinces haue depended.

A notable example of a Christian Prince.

Their religion.

A Monasterie of cccc. Nunnes.

Priesters.

Masse.

A misterie.

The primitive church.

A strange custome.

But to speake bryefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in some thynges folow the *Greekes*. They haue Nunnes and religious men. Not farre from the cite of *Mosca*, they haue a great Monasterie, in the whiche are three hundred Nunnes, typpng vnder the rule of *Basilus Magnus*, in the whiche is also the sepulchre of *S. Sergius* the Abboe. They obserue theyr vow of chastite, whiche none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married Virgins of good fame, may be admitted to choyce of priesthoode, but may neuer be a Nunne. The priestes and Bishops whiche are admitted to orders vnmarried, may neuer after be married: nor yet such as haue iuwes, marry agayne when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastite. Such as commit adulterie or fornication, are greuously punished by the Bishops, and deppriued of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the maner of the *Greekes*, whiche differeth from ours in diuers thyngs, as in fermented bread, after the maner of the *Greekes*. They put in the Chalice as muche water as red wine, which water they vse to heate, because (not without a great mysterie) there issued forth of the syde of our Lord, both blood and water, which we ought by good reason to thynke was not without heat: for els shoulde it scarcely haue been iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that al theyr customes and rites are accordyng to the institutions of the primitive church, and the doctrine of *Basilus Magnus*, and *Chrysostomus*. In this thyng they differ greadly from vs, that they minister the communion to young chyldren of thre yerres of age, which they do with fermented bread dypt in a sponesfull of wine, and geue it to them for the bodye and blood of *Christ*.

A briebe

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



A briefe description of Moscouia, after the later writers, as Sebastian. Munster, and Iacobus Gastaldus,



The prouince of *Mosconia*, is so named of the ryuer *Mosco*, whiche passeth by the metropolitane citie of *Mosconia*, called *Mosca* by the name of the ryuer *Mosco*. This prouince was called of the olde writers, *Sarmatia Asiatica*. The borderers or confines to the *Mosconians* on the one syde towarde the East, are the *Tartars*, called *Nogai*, and the *Scianbanians*, with the *Zagatians*. Towarde the West, the prouinces of *Liuania* and *Lituania*. Towarde the South, the ryuer of *Tanais*, and the people confining with the riuer of *Volga*, called of the olde wyriters *Rba*. And towarde the North, the Ocean sea, called the *Scythian sea*, and the region of *Lapponia*. *Mosconia* is in maner all playne, and full of maryshes, wooddes, and many very great ryuers, whereof the ryuer of *Volga* is the principall. Some call this *Ledil*, as the olde authours named it *Rba*. It begynneth at the great lake called *Lacus Albus* (that is) the white lake, and runneth into the sea of *Bachan*, named of the auncient wyriters, the sea *Caspium* or *Hircanum*. Under the dominion of *Moscouia*, are certayne regions and Dukedomes: as *Alba Russia* (that is) whyte *Russia*. Also *Colmogora*, *Plescouia*, *Basida*, *Nonogradia*, with also manie places of the *Tartars*, whiche are subiecte to the Duke of *Mosconia*. The chiefe cities of *Mosconia*, are *Mosca*, *Plescouia*, *Nonogradia*, *Colmogora*, *Otogeria*, *Viatra*, *Smolenscr*, *Percastania*, *Cologna*, *Volodemaria*, *Roslania*, and *Cassam*. The people of *Mosconia* are *Christians*, and haue great abundaunce of hony and waxe: also ryche furre, as *Sables*, *Parternes*, *Foynes*, and byuers other. All the *Tartars* whiche inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer of *Volga*, haue no dwelling places, nor yet cities or Castles, but cary about with them certayne cartes or wagens couered with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they rest, as we do in our houses.

*Sarmatia Asiatica.*

The *Scythian Ocean.*

The ryuer of *Volga.*  
*Lacus albus.*

The *Caspian sea.*

The chiefe cities.

The whyte *Tartars.*

They

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





Of the northeft frosty sea.

**Hordas.**

They remoue togeather in great compaynes, whiche they call *Hordas*. They are warlyke people, and good hoysmen, and are all *Pacomestiles*.

The bygnes of  
the cite of  
*Mosconia*.

*Sebastian Munster* in his booke of *Uniuersall Cosmographie*, wyrteth that the cite of *Mosca* or *Mosconia* contepnet in circuite .xliii. myles, and that it is twyle as bygge as the cite of *Praga* in *Bohemie*. Of the countrey of *Mosconia*, besyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wyrteth thus: It extendeth in largenesse soure hundred myles, and is ryche in syluer. It is lawfull for no man to go out of the realme, or come in, without the

Syluer.  
The region of  
*Mosconia*.

Dukes letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and full of woodds and marishes. The beastes here, by reason of the colde, are lesse then in other countreys more southwarde. In the midst of the cite of *Mosca*, beyng situate in a playne, there is a Castell with .xvii. towres, and thye bulwarkes, so strong & saye, that the lyke are scarcely seene in any other place. There are also in the Castell .xvi. churches, and thye very large courtes, in the whiche the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges.

**Boates.**

A saye and  
stronge castel  
in the cite of  
*Mosca*.

The Dukes pallaice is buyded after the maner of the Italian buyldyng, and very saye, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere, as is the maner of the most part of the people that inhabite the *North* partes of the woold. They are exceedyngly geuen to dyonkenesse. *Pet* (as some saye) the princes of the lande are prohibyt on payne of death to absteyne from suche strong drynkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certayne times when licence is graunted them, as twise or thise in the yere. They plowe the ground with hoyses, and plowes of wood.

The Dukes  
pallaice.  
Theyr drynke.

They are ge-  
uen to dyon-  
kenesse.

Theyr coyne and other grayne, by reason of long colde, do sel dome waxe rype on the ground, by reason wherof they are sometymes inforced to rype & drye them in their stoues and hot houses, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle. *Mosconia* is extended vnto *Iurbam* and *Corelia* which are in *Scythia*. The famous ryuer of *Tanais*, the *Mosconites* call *Don*, hauyng his springes and originall in *Mosconia* in the Dukedome of *Rexense*. It ryseth out of a ground that is playne, baren, muddy, full of marishes and wooddes. And where it procedeth toward the East to the mountaynes of *Scythia* and *Tartarie*, it bendeth to the south: and comyng to the marishes of *Motis*, it

Coyne and  
grayne.

**Stones.**

The famous  
ryuer of *Tanais*.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



it falleth into them. The river of *Volga* (sometyme called *Rha*, and now called of the *Tartars Edell*) runneth towards the North certaine myles, to whom is ioyned the river *Oca* or *Ocha*, flowing out of *Mosconia*, and then bendyng into the South, and increased with many other rivers, falleth into the sea *Euxinum*, which divideth *Europe* and *Asia*.

The marshes of *Mecotis*, *Volga*, *Ocha*.

The sea *Euxinum*.

The forest of *Hircania*.

*Bri*, *Alces*.

They traueph in winter on *Reades*.

Causes of *tynder*.

Trees and *fruites*.

*Corne* and *grapnes*.

*Hony* in *woodes* and *trees*.

The wood of forest called *Hircania silua*, occupieth a small portion of *Mosconia*: Yet is it somewhere inhabited, and by the long labour of men, made thynner and bare of trees. In that part that lieth toward *Prusia*, is a kinde of great & fierce *Bulles*, called *Vri* or *Bylfontes*, as writeth *Paulus Iouius*. There are also *Alces*, much lyke vnto *Hartes*, with long snoutes of flesh, and long legges without any bowyng of theyr hough or pasternes. These beastes the *Mosconites* call *Lozzi*, and the *Almaines*, *Helones*. The looney that is betwene *Vlna* of *Lituania* by *Smolensc* to *Mosca*, is trauephed in winter on *Reades*, by the snow congeled by long frost, and made very slipperie and compact lyke *Ile*, by reason of much wearyng and treadyng, by meanes whereof this biage is perfourmed with incredible celeritie. But in the Sommer, the playne countreyes can not be ouercome without difficult labour: For when the snow becommeth to be dissolved by continuall heate, it causeth marshes and quampyes inextricable and dangerous both for horse and man, were it not for certaine *Caulcis* made of timber with in maner infinite labour. The region of *Mosconia* (as I haue said) beareth neither *Vines* nor *Diue* trees, nor yet any other trees that beare any apples or fruites of very pleasant and sweete sauour or tast, except *Cherry* trees, forasmuch as all tender fruites and trees, are burnt of the cold blasts of the North wynde. Yet do the fieldes beare all kyndes of *corne*, as *wheate*, and the *grayne* called *Siligo*, whereof the fynest kynde of *breade* is made: also *Wylle*, and *Panpcke*, whiche the *Italians* call *Melica*: Lykewylse all kyndes of *pulse*, as *Beanes*, *Peason*, *Cares*, and such other. But theyr cheefe harvest consisteth of *Hony* and *Waxe*, forasmuch as the whole region is replenished with fruitefull *Bees*, which make most sweete *Hony*, not in the bud band niens hyues, but euen in hollow trees. And hereby commeth it to passe, that both in the wooddes and shadowed launes, are secne many *swarmes* of *Bees* hangyng on the

Lden. The decades.

Bancroft Library.



the holmes of trees, so that it shall not be necessarie to call them together, or charme them with the sound of Balsens. There are oftentimes founde great masses of Honey combes, conserved in trees of the olde Honey forsaken of bees, so muche as the husbandmen can not seeke every tree in so great and large woods: Insomuche that in the stocks or bodies of exceeding great and hollowe trees, are sometymes founde great pooles or lakes of Honey. *Demetrius* chambassadour of the Duke of *Mosconia*, whom he sent to the Bishop of Rome not many yeeres since, made relation that a husbandman of the countrey, not farre from the place where he remayned, seeking in the woods for Honey, descended into a great hollowe tree full of Honye, into the which he slype up to the breast, and luyed there only with Honye for the space of two dayes, calling in value for helpe in that desert of woods: and that in fine dispaynyng of helpe, he escaped by a marvelous chaunce, being drawn out by a great Beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downwarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie serued) perceyued the Beare to be within his reach, he suddenly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to enforce her strength to leape out of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym out, as it chaunced in deede. These regions abounde with Beares, whiche euerywhere seeke both Honye and Bees, not only herewith to fill theyr bellies, but also to helpe theyr syght: For theyr eyes are oftentimes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the Bees: both which grieues are eased by eatyng of Honye. They haue weakest heades, as Lions haue strongest: Insomuche that when (being thereto enforced) they cast them selues downe headlong from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr feete, and lye for a tyme astonysed, and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sometymes on two feete, and spyle trees, backwarde. Sometyne also they invade Bulles, and so hang on them with all theyr feete, that they weerey them with weight. The Beare (as sayeth *Plinie*) bringeth forth her byrth the thirde day, and often tymes two. Theyr byrth is a certayne white masse of flesh without forme, and litle bigger then a mouse, without eyes, and without heare, with only the nayles or claws

Lakes or pooles  
of Honye.

A man almost  
drowned in  
Hony.

A marvelous  
chaunce.

Beares feede of  
hony & bees.

Beares invade  
Bulles.

The Beares  
byrth.



saues commyng forth: but she danceth with continuall  
 hopyng, by title and litle figures the hylowse byth. When she en-  
 treth into the denne which she hath chosen, she creepeth ther-  
 ether with her belly bywarde, least the place should be founde by  
 the steppes of her feete. And being there deliuered of her byth,  
 remaineth in the same place for the space of .xliii. dayes, immou-  
 able as wyrteth Aristotle. They lyue without meate .xl. dayes,  
 and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lychyng and suck-  
 yng theyr ryght foote. At the length chauncing to finde meate,  
 they fill them selues so full, that they remedy that susteyne by  
 vomite, which they mouke by eatyng of Antes. Theyr byth  
 is oppressed with so heauy a sleepe for the space of .xliii. dayes,  
 that it can not be raysed eyther with pickyng or woundes, and  
 in the meane tyme growe exceedyng fatte. After fourtiene dayes  
 they wake from sleepe, and begyn to lych and sucke the sides of  
 theyr soye feete, and lyue thereby for a space: For yet is it  
 apparent that they lyue by any other meate, vntill the spring  
 tyme of the yere. At whiche tyme begynnyng to runne a-  
 hynde, they feede of the tender budde and young sprynges of  
 bryanches of trees, and other herbes correspondent to theyr  
 hypes.

The Beares  
denne.

Beares lyue  
without meate  
.xl. dayes.

The sleepe of  
Beares.

Beares are  
raysed by  
pickyng.

The religion of  
the Idolaters.

The heathen  
religion.

The heathen  
subject to the  
Duke of Mos-  
coue.

The heathen  
religion.

Beside five hundred yeres, the Idolaters honoured the  
 Goddes of the Temples: And then byll receyued the Chyistian  
 faith when the Bishoppes of Grecia began to dissent from the  
 church of the Latines: and therfore receyued the rites of the  
 Greeces. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade  
 vnder both kynges: And thinke that the soules of dead men are  
 not helped with the suffragens of prayes, nor yet by the deu-  
 tion of theyr friends or kynsmen: Also that the place of Pur-  
 gatour is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine seruice, the bysto-  
 rie of the myracles of Christ, and the Epistles of sainte Paul  
 are reherced out of the pulpits. Beside Moscoue, are  
 many people which they call Scythians, and are partly sub-  
 iecte to the Prince of Moscoue. These are they which Duke  
 Iuan subdued, as are the people of Perus, Bashird, Cezyrenis-  
 sa, Inbra, Corula, and Perushy. These people were Idolaters  
 before the Duke compelled them to baptize, & appointed a bi-  
 shop ouer them named Cyprian, whom the Duke banished after the

And.

departure

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.





departure of the Duke, slayen apace, and fine. But the Duke returning shortly after, afflicted them sore, and assigned them a newe bishop.

It is here also to be noted, that the olde Cosmographers sayne, that in these regions towarde the North pole, there should be certayne great mountaynes, which they called *Tyberos* and *Hyperboreos*, which neuertheless are not founde in nature. It is also a fable, that the ryuers of *Tanis* & *Folham* doe spring out of high mountaynes, whereas it is appaerent that both these ryuers, and many other, haue their originall in the playnes.

It was then an opinion that all ryuers spring out of mountaynes. The fruitful region of Colmogora. The great ryuer Diuidna.

Next to *Poscouta*, is the fruitful region of *Colmogora*, through the whiche runneth the ryuer of *Diuidna*, being the greatest that is knowne in the North partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certayne tymes of the yeere, as doeth the ryuer of *Nilus* in *Egypte*, ouerfloweth the felde rounde about, and with aboundance of sattu moystrure, resisteth the coldnesse of the ayre. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without ploughyng: and fearyng the newe inturie of the ryuer, springeth, groweth, and rypeth, with wonderfull celeritie of hallyng nature.

Wheat is with our plowing.

The ryuer of Tuga. In Tuga.

Into the ryuer of *Diuidna* runneth the ryuer of *Inga*: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marie towne named *Vsinga*, being a hundred and fiftie myles distant from the chiefe citie of *Posca*. To this marie towne, from the higher countreys, are sent the precious fures of *Parternes*, *Sables*, *Uolues*, & such other, which are exchanged for wyues & other kyndes of wares & marchandises. *Dycheria* & *Austenus*.

Fures.

And forasmuche as many see marvyle that such plenty of hony should bee in so colde a countrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered, that lyke as spices, gums, and odoriferous fruites are engendred in hotte regions, by continuall heate durryng all the whole yeere, without impressiō of the mortifying qualite of colde, whereby all thynges are constrained as they are dilated by heate, even so in colde and moyll regions (whose moystrure is thynner and more waterye then in hot regions) are flowers engendred more abundantly, as caused by impressiō of lisse and signer heate, working in thynne matter of water.

The naturall cause of much hony in colde regions. Summers and wyues in hotte countreys.

Flowers in colde regions.

Eden. The decades. Bancroft Library.



water the moysture, lesse concocted then the matter of gummes  
and lynces, and other vinctuous frutes and trees growing in hot  
regions. For although (as Ponsler sayeth here before) the re-  
gion of Malacolia beareth neither vines or Olives, or any other  
frutes of sweete nature, by reason of the colde of the thereof, never-  
theless, so much as floures (whereof hony is chiefly made) may  
in sommer season growe abundantly in the playnes, mar-  
shes, & woodes, not onely on the ground, but also on trees in colde  
regions, it is agreeable to good reason, that great plenty of hony  
should be in suche regions as abounde with floures, which  
are brought forth with the first degree of heate, and first ap-  
proche of the sunne, as appeareth in the spring tyme, not only  
by the springing of floures in felde and Gardeynes, but also  
of blossomes of trees springing before the leaves or frutes, as  
the hygeer and thymme matter first dyatome out with the lowest  
and least degree of heate: as the lybe is seene in the arte of  
spring, whereby all thymme and lybe moystures are lyb-  
ted by by the first degree of the tyme: and the heaviest and thye-  
hest moystures are dyatome out with more vehement tyme. As we  
may therefore in this case compare the generation of floures to  
the heat of May, the generation of gummes to the heat of June,  
and lynces to the heate of July: Even so, in suche colde regions  
whole summer agreeth rather with the temperate heate & moys-  
ture of May, then with the extreme heate of the other monethes,  
that heate is more apte to bring forth abundance of floures, as  
things caused by moderate heate, as playnly appeareth by their  
tast and savour, in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate, either by-  
ting the tongue, or offending the head, as is in spices, gums, and  
frutes of hotte regions. And as in colde and playne regions, mo-  
derate heate, with abundance of moysture, are causes of the gene-  
ration of floures (as I have sayde) so lykewyse the length of the  
dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer  
season, in such colde regions, is a great helpe hereunto: Cardo-  
mus writeth in his booke *De Plantis*, that hyamble & fenice growe  
not but in colde regions, as doeth wheate in temperate regions:  
and that spices and hot seedes, can not growe in colde regions,  
so much as being of thymme substance, they should soone be  
moystified & extinct by excessive colde. For (as he sayeth) nothing

Floures of  
trees.

2nd degree of  
trees.

An example of  
the degrees  
of plants.

The generati-  
on of floures  
by moderate  
heate.

Long dayes  
and short  
nyghtes.  
Hyamble and  
fenice.

lynces.

Eden.

can

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



can concoct rype, and attenuate the substance of fruites without the helpe of ayre, agreeable to the natures of such thinges as are brought forth in the same, although it may doe this in rootes. But in manner all flowers are of sweete savour, so much as the moisture that is in them, being thicke and but little, is by means heate soone and easily concocted or made rype. Suche also as are soone rype, are soone rotten, according to the proverbe.

Plinie, although in the .x. booke of his naturall historie. Cap. viii. he sayeth that honey is gathered of the flowers of all trees and letters of plantes, excepte myell and the beache called *Cbern-pole* (which some call *Goose foot*) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayre: for in the .xii. Chapter of the same booke, he sayeth thus.

This cometh from the ayre at the rising of certayne starres, and especially at the rising of *Sirius*, and not before the rising of *Vergilia*. (which are the seven starres called *Pleiasis*) in the setting of the day: For then at the moorning rising, the leaves of trees are sounde moist with a fatte dewe: Infirmes that siche as have been abode under the firmament at that tyme, have they apparell amoynted with liquor, and the beate of they head clamyng. And whether this bee the sweete of heauen, or as it were a certayne spectyll of the starres, ether the milk of the ayre purgynge it selfe, I woulde it were pure, liquide, & simple of his owne nature, as it first falleth from above. But now descending so large, and infected, not only with suche unclean vapours and exhalations, as it meeteth with by the way, but afterwards also corrupted by the leaves of trees, beache, and flowers of sundry tastes and qualities, and by the way as well in stomaches of the bees (for they vomite it at their mouthes) as also by long resting the same in Hives, it neverthelesse receiveth a great parte of the beauntie nature &c. Agayne in the .xiii. Chapter of the same booke he sayeth, that in certayne regions towards the North, as in some places of Germany, honey is founde in suche quantitie, that there have been seene honey combes of eight foote long, and blake in the holow parte. By the which wordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it doeth appeare that abundance of honey should chiefly be engendred in suche regions, where the heat of summer

The savour of flowers.

What Plinie sayeth of honey.

Bees is a sort of insects called *Apis*, that is, the Dogge, of whom the particular names have they name.

What is honey.

Howe honey is corrupted.

Howe of great quantitie in some regions.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Sommer is temperate and continuall, as well by nyght as by day,  
 as it is not in hot regions, where the nyghts be long and colde,  
 as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thinges as are  
 sponed by continuall heate, mouyng, and circulation, are hynde-  
 red by refrigeration or colde (as appeareth in the arte of stylyng  
 and hatchyng of egges) even so by the action of temperate and  
 continuall heate, without interposition of contrarie and moztify-  
 yng qualitie, cruse thinges are in shorte tyme made rypp, sower  
 made swete, thicke made thynne, heauie made lycht, grosse  
 made subtyle, harde made softe, dead made luyng, and in fine,  
 boopes made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the maruey-  
 lous woozke of dygestion of luyng beastes, whereby the finest  
 parte of theyr nourishment is turned into blood, and the finest of  
 that blood conuerted into spirites, as the lyke is also seene in the  
 nourishment of trees, planties, and hearbes, & all other thinges  
 that growe on the grounde, all which are moued, digested, sub-  
 tiliate, attenuate, rypped, and made swete by the action of this  
 continuall heate whereof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore,  
 if hony be eyther the swete of the starres, or the iuice of the appe  
 purgyng it selfe (as Plinie wytteth) or ocherwise engendred of  
 subtyle and fine vapours ryling from the earth, and concocted  
 digested in the appe by the sayde continuall and moderate heate,  
 it may seeme by good reason that the same should be engendred  
 in sommer season moze abundantly in colde regions then in hot,  
 for the causes aforesayde. And that it may by authoritie and rea-  
 son moze manifestly appeare, both that the heate of sommer in  
 colde regions is continuall (as I haue sayde) and also that the  
 colde in wynter is not there so intolerable to inhabitauntes of  
 those regions as other doe thynke, I haue thought good for the  
 better declaration hereof, to adde herunto what I haue gather-  
 ed out of the booke of Zigelus, wyttten of the Rorthe regi-  
 ons.

Hot nyghts  
 in colde re-  
 gions.  
 A similitude.

Natural! heag  
 beeth subtyle  
 and digest all  
 thinges.

Subtyle vap-  
 ours digested  
 by heate.

Colde regions.

Zigelus.

Fin. III.

OF

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





Of the Northeast frostie sea,

Of the North regions, and of the moderate and continual  
 heate in colde regions, as well in the nyght as in the day  
 in sommer season: Allo howe thole regions are  
 habitable to th inhabitants of the same,  
 contrary to the opinion of the  
 olde wryters.

Ziglerus.



Of this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the  
 North regions in the description of Scandia,  
 wryteth as foloweth.

We will increase of this matter, not as  
 putting the same in question as did the olde  
 wryters, nor gathering judgement deducted  
 of reasons in way of argument, so as inuche  
 as we are already more certayne by hystorie that these colde regi-  
 ons are inhabited. We will first therfore shew by natural reason,  
 and by consideration of the sphaere, declare howe by the helpe of  
 man and arte, colde regions are inhabited without damage or de-  
 struction of lpyng beastes: And will first speake of the qualitie  
 of sommer, declaring howe it is there augmented. Per intend I  
 not to comprehend all that may be sayde in this matter, but on-  
 ly rehearse suche reasons and similitudes as are most apparent  
 and easie to be understood.

The qualitie of  
 sommer in  
 colde regions.

The course of  
 the Sunne.

Vapours.  
 Short and  
 warme nyghts

Switzerland.

In such regions therfore, as are extended from the burnt lyne  
 or Equinoctiall toward the North, as much as the sunne ryleth  
 higher over them, so much are they the more burnt with heat, as  
 Africa, by cause it ryleth highest over them, as they are nearest to  
 the Equinoctial: & taryng with them so much the shorter tyme,  
 causeth shorter dayes, with longer & colder nyghtes, to restore the  
 damage of the day past, by reason of the moisture consumed by  
 vapour. But in such regions over the which the sun ryleth lower  
 (as in Sarmatia) it remaineth there the longer in the day, and  
 causeth so much the shorter and warmer nyghtes, as receyving  
 warme vapours of the day past, which vapours helpe the woork  
 of the day. I speake as I have founde by experience, saych Vp-  
 liensis: For I have felte the sommer nyghtes scarcely tollerable  
 for heate in Switzerland, whereas I felte them colde in Rome.  
 This benefite of the increase of the day doeth augment so much  
 the more in colde regions, as they are nearer the poles: and  
 ceaseth

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.



ceaseth) not vntyll it come directly ouer the center of poynte of the axes of arceltree of the worlde, where the sunne being, at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate about. xxiii. degrees: In which regions, one continuall day consisteth of. vi. monethes from the spring tyme, by the standing of the sunne (called *Solstitium*) in the signe of Cancer, to Autumne. The Sunne therefore, without any offence of the nyght, gyueth his influence vpon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth during that tyme, which maketh to the great increase of sommer, by reason of continuance. Wee haue now therefore thought good to gather, by a certayne coniecture, howe greatly we thinke the sommer to be increased heereby.

One day of. vi. monethes.

Howe the sommer is increased in colde regions.

We haue before declared howe hygh the sunne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of the sunne: And so many partes is it eleuate in Rome at the staye of the sunne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeere. But here, in the nyd wynter, the sunne at noonetyde is beneficiall, and byngeth forth floures, Roses, and Ieli-floures. I haue gathered some in winter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growyng in open Gardens in maner in euery bed vnder the bare heauen; brought forth only by the sunne. But this benignitie of the sunne, continueth not past fyue houres in the naturall day, forasmuch as the operation thereof is extinct by the coldnesse of the nyght solowng. But if this benefite myght be receyued without hinderance of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it should surely bring forth many wonderful thynges, if moisture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, we may well conceiue that the Romane wynter, although it be not hotte, yet to be equall in heate to the full spring tyme in the same citie, during the tyme of the sayd fyue houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the sunne vnder both places, and of the known qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by the access of the sunne to such places where the longest day continueth certayne moneths; we may gather that sommer, in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane spring.

Rome.

Cold nights in hot regions.

The Romane wynter.

But the more difficult question, is of the tyme of the. vi. monethes in the which the Sunne leaueth those regions,

One night of. vi. monethes.

An.iii.

and

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Obiections.

and goeth by the contrary or ouerthwarte circle toward the south in wynter. For they say that at that tyme, those regions are desoynded with horrible darkenelle, and nyghtes not increased, whiche may be the cause that beastes can not seeke theyr foode: And that also the colde should then bee intollerable. By which double euyls all thynges constrayned should dye, so that no beast were able to abyde the inturpes of wynter and samyne insuyng thereof: but that all beastes should peryshe before the sommer folowyng, when they should byng forth theyr broode or succession: and that for thise causes, the sayde colde clyme should bee perpetually desolace and vnhabitable. To all which obiections, we answered in this maner.

The twaye  
lightes.

The light of  
the Moone.

The nyght  
vnder the pole.

It demonstra-  
tio.

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I say, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason. For not as the Sunne falleth, so sodeynly commeth the darke nyght: but that the euenyng doeth substitute and prolong the day long after, as also the day slypyng or dawnyng of the day, gyueth a certayne lyght before the rysing of the Sunne: After the which, the residue of the nyght that recepueth no lyght by the sayde euenyng and moynyng twilightes, is accomplished by the lyght of the Moone, so that the nyghtes are sildome vnaugmented. Let this bee an example prooued by our temperate regions, whereby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole: Therefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a long tyme, as we will moze presently demonstrate. It is approued by the Astronomers, that the Sunne descendyng from the highest halfe sphere by eightiene paralels of the vnder horizon, maketh an ende of the twilight, so that at the length the darke night succeedeth: And that the Sunne appoichyng, and rysing aboue the highest halfe sphere by as many paralels, doeth diminish the nyght and increase the twylyght. Agayne, by the position or placynge of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall. Those paralelles therefore that are paralelles to the horizontall lyne, are also paralelles to the Equinoctiall. So that the Sunne descendyng there vnder the horizon, doeth not byng darke nyghtes to those regions, vntyll it come to the paralels distant, xiiii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

Durynge

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



During the tyme of these sayde tye monethes of darke-  
 nesse under the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of  
 the Sunne and the sayde tynnyghtes, onely for the space of  
 thre monethes, in the whiche the Sunne goeth and returneth  
 by the portion of the overthwarthe circle. But yet neyther this  
 tyme of thre monethes is without remedy from heauen. For  
 the Moone with her full globe increased in lyght, hath accesse  
 at that tyme, and illuminateth the monethes lackyng lyght,  
 every one by them selues, halfe the course of the moneth: by  
 whose benefite it cometh to passe that the nyght, named as  
 vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mo-  
 neth and a halfe, neyther that continually or all at one tyme:  
 but this also diuided into thre sortes of shorter nyghtes, of the  
 whiche every one endureth for the space of two weekes, and  
 are illuminate of the Moone accordyngly. And this is the rea-  
 son conceyued of the power of the spherre, whereby we testifie that  
 the sommers and nyghtes under the pole are tollerable to ly-  
 uynge beastes. But we wyll not declare by other remedies  
 of nature and arte, that this colde so greatly feared, is more  
 remisse and tollerable then our opinion: so that, compared to  
 the nature of suche beastes as lyue there, it may be abydden.  
 And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie  
 then that age in the whiche any thyng was exactly knowne or  
 discouered of the North regions. The olde wynters there-  
 fore perswaded onely by naked coniecture, dyd geather what  
 they myght determyne of those places: Or rather, by the  
 estimation of heauen, the whiche, because they felte it to be  
 hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men boine in  
 the tyme of Egypt and Grecia, tooke thereby an argument  
 of the whole habitable earth. The hylole of Strabo is knowen,  
 that a pottle of brasse, whiche was broken in sunder with frosen  
 water, was brought from Pontus, and shewed in Delphis in to-  
 ken of a greuous wynter. Here therefore, they that so great-  
 ly feared the wynter (suche as chaunceth to the earth vnder the  
 xlviii. paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken pottle to  
 the temple of Appollo: what coude suche men truly define  
 vpon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they  
 were

The Moone.

Remedies of  
nature & art.The olde  
wynters per-  
suaded by con-  
iecture.A brasse pottle  
broken with  
frost.Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





## Of the Northeast frosty sea.

were inhabited or not? But suche as folowed these, being contented with chymencions of the olde autours, and bozne in manner vnder the same qualite of heauen, persylled wyllyngly in the same opinio[n], with moze confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof we nowe utreate: so lyghtly was that opinio[n] recepued as touchyng the inhabitable climate vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and faith (so muche as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to stande against the sentence of the olde autours, affirmyng the North regions within the colde climate to be inhabited with berrynges, coddes, haddockes, and byettes, tumpes, and other great fshes, with thynfinite number whereof, tables are furnyshed throug[h] a great parte of Europe: All whiche are taken in the North sea extendyed beyonde our knoweledge. This sea at certayne tymes of the yeere, pouereth sooth his plentifulnes, or rather byueth sooth his increale to seeke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermoze also, euen the mouthes of the riuier of Tyber receiued a fsh as a newe gest sent from the north sea: this swamme twise throug[h] Fraunce, and twise throug[h] Spayne, ouerpasse the *Ligurian* and *Tuscan* sea, to communicate herselfe to the cite of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenyshed with fsh: insomuch that no power of colde is able to extinguysh the thyncrease of the yeere folowing, and the succession reparable so many hundred yeeres. And I plaine-ly thinke, that if it should of necessite folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earth and the water, should be destructiue to lyuyng creatures, the water should chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the depe wynter, both that increale is brought sooth, and fshing is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with like plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre, let the sayth hereof rest in the hypothesis folowing, wherein we intend to declare howe by the power of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may come to passe. Therefore as touchyng nature, we suppose that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue geuen suche order to all thynges, whereby euery thyng may be tollerable to the next. The extremities of the elementes consent with theyr next. The ayre is grosse about the earth and water:

**Fishes of the North sea.**

**The North sea.**

**The qualite of water.**

**The land.**

**The diuine prouidence in moderating the elementes.**

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



water: but chymie and hot about the fyre. By this providence of nature, the uttermost sea is very salt. And salt (as witnesseth *Plinie*) yeildeth the saltnesse of Dyle. But Dyle, by a certayne natyve heat, is of pproperty agreeable to fyre. The sea then, beinge all of such qualitie, putteth forth it selfe farre upon the greene landes, whereby by reason of the saltnesse thereof, it moveth and stirreth by generative heat, as by saltnesse it nourisheth the fecunditie of thynges generate. It groweth this fruitfulnessse to the earth at certayne floods, although the earth also it selfe have in his inner bowels the same luyck and noysshing heat, whereby not only the Dennes, Caves, and hollow places, but also springes of water are made warme: & this so much the more, in howe muche the wynter is more debement. This thyng doth more appeare by this example, that the mountaynes of *Norway* and *Swethlands* are fruitful of metales. In the which, silver and copper are concoct and molten into veins, which can scarcely be done in soynaces. By this reason also, the vapours and hot exhalations pearcyng the earth and the waters, and through both those natures breachyng forth into the ayre, temperate the qualitie of heauen, & maketh it tollerable to beasts, as witnesseth the huge bygnesse of the *Whales* in those seas, with the strength of body, and long lyfe of such beastes as lyue on the land: which thyng coulde not be, except all thyngs were there commodiously nourished by the benefite of the heauen and the ayre. For nothinge that in the tyme of encrease is hurt by any iniurie, or that is cuple severe at the tyme it lyueth, can prosper wel. Neither are such thynges as live there, offended with theyr natural wynter, as though an *Egyptian* or *Ethiopian* were suddenly conuayghed into those cold regions. For they were in long tyme, by litle and litle, brought hysl acquainted with the nature of that heauen, as maye be pproved both by the lyfe of man, and by the hystorie of holy scripture. They that were led from *Mesopotamia*, and that famous Tower of *Babilon* towards the North partes of the world, in the first dispersion of nations, did not immediately passe to the extreme boundes, but planteth theyr habitations first under a myddle heauen, betweene both, as in *Thracia*, and *Pontus*, where theyr posteritie was accustomed the better to susteyne the rigor of *Scythia* and *Tanis*.

The nature of the sea.

Salt.

Generative heat.

Outward colde is cause of inward heat.

Metales.

Vapours and exhalations.

Whales.

Beastes.

Wherby maye be considered the cause of the death of our men that saile directly to *Gauna*.

The passage from one extreme to another, but by a myddle.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



Of the Northeast frosty sea.

nals, as he that cometh from winter to summer, may the better after abyde yte and snow, beyng first hardened thereto by the frostes of Autumne. In lyke maner mortal men, accustomed to beare the hardnesse of places next unto them, were thereby at the length more confirmed to sustayne the extremities. And here also, if any sharpnesse remaine that may seeme intollerable, nature hath so provided for the same, with other remedies. For the land and sea, both geuen unto beastes, deepe and large Caves, Denes, and other hollowe places, and secreete corners in mountaynes and rocks, both on the land and by sea bankes, in the which are ever conteyned warme vapoures, so muche the more intent and vehement, in how much they are the more constrained by extreme cold. Nature hath also geuen valleyes, diuerted and defended from the North windes. She hath likewise covered beastes with haire, so muche the thicker, in how much the vehementie of cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and richest fures are brought from those regions, as Sables, whose ppyce is growne to great excessse, next unto gold and precious stones, and are esteemed princely ornaments. The beastes that beare these fures, are hunted cheefely in winter (whiche thyng is more strange) because their haire is then thicker and cleaveth faster to the skin. How greivous then shal we thinke the wynter to be there, where this litle beall lieth so wet, and where the hunters may search the Denies and hauntes of such beastes through the woods and snow? But such beastes, the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abyde thynurie of the cold, either lye byd in winter, or change their habitacion, as do certayne beastes also in our climate. Nature hath furthermore geuen remedie to man, both by art and industry to defende hym selfe both abrode and at home. Abrode with a thicke vesture, and the same well doctored. At home, with large spers on Hearthes, Chymneyes, and in Stoooves for the daye, with close Chambers, and Couches, soft and warme Beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the wynters, which seeme rigourous to straungers, although they are to thynhabitantes more tollerable then our opinion, as in verbe by the fyrr naturall mixture or composition of theyr bodies, such thyngs are agreeable to them, as seeme very hard to other. The Lion in Affrik and

Caves and Denes.

Valleys.

The best fures. Sables.

Beastes that lye byd in wynter.

All beastes have the nature of the place where they are engendred.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



and the beards in *Sarmatia*, are fierce, as to theyr present strength  
 and vigour: but transfused into a contrary beaues, are of little  
 strength and courage. The foule called *Ciconia* (which some  
 thinke to be the *Scythia*) doth not carry the winter: yet so the  
 Cicones come at that tyme. The *Scythian* will accuse the Ro-  
 mane beaues as insaucyng fencers, whereas neuertheless there  
 is none more boldsome. Such as haue been wenterly brought  
 up, if they come haue plenty into the campe, can not away with  
 hunger, marching, beate, passages through ruers, battayles,  
 sieges, and assaults: But the other souther, exercised in the  
 warres, weth these as meditations of the seld, as hardened  
 them by long experience. He that hath been accustomed to the  
 shoothe of the cicle, and will attempte the laying of the poet  
 Virgil, *Nudus ara, sero nudus*, that is, naked and bare, without  
 house and home, shal to his peryt make an end of the verse, *Habebis  
 frigora febrem* (that is) he shal haue the colde ague. Such  
 thynges therfore as seeme hard thus be, being accustomed by  
 litle and litle, become more tollerable: In which that their ex-  
 ercise of sufferances by such degrees, doth often times growe to pro-  
 digious effectes, farre beyond our expectation. And thus we  
 seeme to haue made sufficient demonstration, by heauen, nature,  
 and art, whereby it may appere, that no part of the land or sea is  
 denied to liuing creatures. The reader may also perceiue howe  
 large matter of reasons and exatuples may be opened by the de-  
 claryng of our opinion, wherein we rest. Let therfore thankes be  
 of the excellent autours geue place, and the content of the newe  
 writers agree to this bishop, not as nowe at the length compre-  
 hendes (whereas before many hundre yeres *Germanie* and  
*Scandia* had encursions of merchandies not feared by the large  
 gulfes of *Gothia*) but as nowe by our commentaries brought to  
 light: and haueing sayde thus muche in manner of a preface, we  
 will nowe procede to mytch of the fleshy regions.

What exercis  
may be.

What maketh  
maneries.  
Gentiles  
of yong  
Gulnic.

Scandia.

**Scandia.**

**S**cania, *Scoulandia*, or *Scoulandia*, is as muche to  
 saye as *Scoulandia*, or *Scoulandia*. Plin in our place,  
 nameth it *Scandia*, and in an other *Scandinavia*, where he  
 no faute in the examples.

Scania is  
saye in the  
burly tongue.

36

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





The fertilitye of  
Scondia.The maner of  
Danus  
ScondiaThe maner of  
the Gothes.

Transilvania.

It was named *Scondia*, by reason of the superfluous and fruitfulness thereof. And this also may be seen in beneficiall benefits, fertilitye of groundes, commoditie of hauens and marie towne, abundance of ryuers and fysh, plenty of beastes, great quantity of metall, as golde, silver, copper, and leade, diligent cultivating the groundes, with towne and cities well inhabited and governed by civill lawes, it giveth place to some other fortunate region. This was in maner unknowne to the olde Greeces and Latins, as may appeare by this argument, that with one consent they affirmed, that in these north regions the colde zone of climate, was condemned to perpetuall snowe, intolerable to all living creatures. For some of them have made mention hereof as to be inhabited, Among whom *Plinie*, as one of the chiefe, saith in his fourth booke, that *Scondia* is of unknowne bignesse: and onely that portion thereof to be knowne, which is inhabited with the nation of the *Hilitiones* in little villages: *Strabon* yet is *Erasmus* lesse in opinion. Other more ancient then *Plinie*, have placed most fortunate regions, with men of long life (which the Greeces call *Macrobios*) and of most innocent behavoure under the tracte of those landes: and that there came from thence to *Dolchos*, certayne religious virgines, with bowes and giftes consecrated to *Apollo*: And furthermore, that that nation observed this institution, untill the same virgins were violated of them, of whom they were recruited as strangers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of *Scondia*, and the people that inhabite the same, although they were since unknowne: as lykewyse the *Gobes* departing from these North landes, although they obtayned the temple of the regions about the marshes of *Motis*, and the coastes of the sea *Faxinus*, with the realme of *Denmarke* (whereof that is thought to be a portion which is nowe called *Transilvania*) and the bankes of the ryuer of *Danubius*, and in last, invaded the *Romane* Empire, yet were not the regions well knowne from whence they took their originall. Therefore lyke as part of the olde wyriters are insufficient witnesses, to testifye of our narrations as touching these landes unknowne to them: Even so the other parte which they excluded the same as inhabitable, are to be commended, leaste their authoritye, beinge admitted, would engender



engender opinions not agreeable or convenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Libernus, in his commentaries of Adosconia, writeth thus. Scandia or Scandia, is no Island (as some have thought) but part of the continent or firme land of Suetia, which by a long tract reacheth to Cosbland: and that nowe the kyng of Denmarke possesseth a great part thereof. But whereas the writers of these thynges have made Scandia greater then Suetia, and that the Gothes and Lombardes came from thence, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these thre kyngdomes as it were in one bodie, only under the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that part of land that lyeth betwene the sea Baltheum (which floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was unknowne: and that by reason of so manye myrtythes, innumerable rivers, and intemperatenesse of heauen, it is yet rude, uncultured, and litle knowne. Which thyng hath been the cause that some iudged of that was called by the name of Scandia, to be one great Island.

The Gothes & Lombardes.

Gronelande.



Gronelande is interpreted greene land, so called for the great encrease and fruitfullnesse of pasture. By reason whereof, what great plenty of cattail there is, it may hereby appere, that as such time as shippes may passe thither, they see soory great heapes of Cheeke and Butter to be solde, whereby we coniecture that the land is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches under the Dignation of Archidia. To one of these, was of late yeeres a Bishop appoynted, only by the title of a Suffragane, in consideration that while the Metropolitane doth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place, and difficult navigation, the people is in manner false to gentilitie, being of them schies of notable wicces, given to magickall artes. For it is sayd that they (as also the people of Laponia) do raise tempestes on the sea with magicall incchantmentes, and bying such shippes into danger as they intend to spoyle. They use litle shippes made of Larcher, and sale agaynst the howling of the sea and rocks, and towch them off with other shippes. Peter Adair of Angiers, writeth in his Decades of

Fruitfull pasture.

Religious negligence.

Incchanting.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



The blage of  
Sebastian Cabot  
to the fro-  
zen sea.

Grønlande.

Wardhus.

Lapponia and  
Grønlande.

Schoeni.

Cabot tolde me  
that this is a  
fresh water &  
not of the sea.

A commixtion  
of salt water &  
fresh.

The sea be-  
tween Norway  
and Island.

Terra Viridis.

of the Spaniards navigations that Sebastian Cabot, sailing from England continually toward the North, followed that course so farre, that he chanced upon great flakes of yse in the Month of July: and that diverging from thence, he followed the coast by the streame bending toward the South, untill he came to the clyme of the Mann of Hispaniola, aboute Cuba, an Island of the Caribales. Which narration hath given me occasion to extende Grønland beyond the promontorie of cape of Huisfarch, to the contyneut of syeme lande of Lapponia, aboute the castell of Wardhus: whiche thing I dyd the rather, for that the reuerende Archebyschop of Nidrosia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the forme of a crooked Elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lapones consent with them in the lyke Magicall practises, and doo n epyther embrace the Christian religion, nor refuse it: wherby I haue thought this lykness of customes to be betwene them, because they lye together in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full two hundred Schoeni, every one being a space of ground containing threescorfe furlonges, which make leauen myles, & a halfe. It furthermo agreeth with this coniecture that Cabot chanced into such yse. And albeit, as touching the Month of July, I wyll contend it is not well rehearsed, no although he had sailed vnder the poole, for such reasons as we haue declared before to the contrary: neuertheless, that at some tyme he sailed by yse, this testifieth in that he sailed not by the wayne sea, but in places neare vnto the land, comprehending & embosling the sea in forme of a gulfe, whereas for the same cause the gulfe of Gotland is frozen, because it is streight and narrow: in the which also the litle quantitie of salte water is overcome by the abundance of fresh water of many and great ryuers that fall into the gulfe. But betwene Norway and Island, the sea is not frozen, for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the power of fresh water is there overcome of the abundance of the salte water. There is a fame (but of vncertaine authoritie) that the Spaniards saye at this present to Grønlande, and to an other lande, whiche they call Terra Viridis, that is, the greene lande, bysing from thence such wares as are founde in Grønlande. Toward the North, it reacheth to the unknown



unknowne land under the pole, from whence also the theemes and robbers of the Pigmei come into this lande. Which is an argument that the regions under the pole are inhabited, & almost surrounded with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers call *Cheersonesi. or Peninsula* (that is) almost *Ilandes*.

Pigmet.

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East syde, which lyeth towarde Nor way.

Marthus Castle.	54.	70.	30.
Towarde the North.	53.	30. 71.	30.
The first extencion.	40.	71.	40.
The second extencion.	28.	72.	
Quinsarch. promont.	22.	67.	
The extencion.	5.	61.	45.

It is continued from thence by the coastes of the lande of *Baccallaos*.

Baccallaos.

Towarde the West and North, it is terminated with an unknowne ende of landes and seas.

**Ilande.**

**I**lande is interpreted the land of fire, and is called of the olden wyters *Thylis*. It is extended betweene the South and the North, almost two hundred schoenes in longitude. It is for the most parte full of mountaynes, and uncultured. But in the playnes it hath such fruitful pastures, that they are sayne sometymes to dyue the beastes from theyr steepe, lest they should be suffocate with so much farnesse. This Ilande is famous by the strange myracles of nature, of the whiche *Saxo Grammaticus* in his hystoie of *Denmarke*, and *Olaus Gothus*, in his description of the North landes, doe make mention. There are in it thre mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are covered with perpetuall snowe; but the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne *Etna*, in the Ilande of *Sicilie*, boyling with continuall flames of fyre, and castyng forth bymestone. One of these is named *Helga*, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the moune of the crosse. The thyrde is named *Hecla*, whose flames neyther consume flaxe or tow, masters most apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with

Ilande called Thylis.

Schoene in length.

Myracles of nature in Ilande.

Three marueylous mountaynes.

Helga.

Hecla.

Da. i.

lyke

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.





the first as the shot of great artillery is driven forth by violence of fyre, even so by the conviction and repugnance of fyre, colde, and bymstone, great stones are hurte thowne into the ayre. Neare unto these mountaynes are three chynkes or open places in the earth, of huge bymstone, and such depth (especially at the mount *Hecla*) that no light can attayne therto. But to such as looke into them, there first appeares men as though they were drowned, and yet breathyng frooth theyr soules: who beyng exhorted by theyr friendes to resorte to theyr stone, they answer with mourning voyce and greivous sighes, that they must departe from thence to the mount *Hecla*, and therewith sodaynely vanishe out of sight. He stoweth about the *Islande* for the space of seven or eight monethes, making by rymyng togeather a certayne miserable waphyng and growyng noise, not vniuersally the voyce of man. This habitaunte chynke, that in this *Isle* and the mount *Hecla*, are the places where the civill soules of theyr people are imprisoned. If any man take a great portion of this *Isle*, and keepe it as diligently as may be in a close hellsell or cofer, the same doeth so vanishe at the tyme when the other *Isle* about the *Islande* dissolvethe, that not so much as one droppe of water of *Isle* can there be founde.

Strangest things.

It.

A strange thing.

Four springes of contrary nature.

Abundance of bymstone.

Dyed by.

Scarce of coine.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng towarde the sea coastes, are four springes of water, of most byvers and contrary nature. The first, by reason of his perpetuall and fervent heate, sodaynely turneth all bodyes, that are cast therein, into stones, referuyng neuerthelesse theyr fyre forme and shap. The seconde, is of intolerable colde. The thyrde, is sweeter then honey, and most pleasant to quench thyrst. The fourth, is playne poyson, pestilent, and deadly. There is furthermore in these springes sicke abundance of bymstone, that a thousand pounde weight thereof is bought for litle, as for the tenth parte of a ducate. Theyr chiefe trades, are byped fysh, as *Wolles*, *Wardens*, *Wolpes*, *Walpas*, *Wolchfishes*, and such other, which they exchange for wheat, and such other things, as are brought thither from *Lubecke*, *Danzowick*, and *Amsterdam*, for they have adventures such scarcenesse of coine, that they be byped fysh in the time of heat, although in sommer the *Islande* be covered with greene and fruitful meadowes, that they are scarce to be founde.

Eden. The decades.  
Bancroft Library.



to typpre they beastes from pasture, least they should suffocate for  
 so much farnesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good  
 butter, and apte to be used in matters of pbulche. There are found  
 diuers kindes of good Haukes, as Faulcons, Gerfaulcons, Lan-  
 ners, and Wyperhaukes: Also Ravens, Crowses, Beares, Hares,  
 and Foxes, both white and blacke. They haue most swift boyles,  
 and such as run .xxx. miles continually without rest or haice. They  
 haue many churches: & houles builded of the bones of Whales  
 and other great fishes. The navigation is not open to this Island  
 but in sommer season: and that only for the space of foure mo-  
 nethes, by reason of the colde and Ice whereby the passage is  
 stopped. If any stryfe or debate arysse on the sea among the mari-  
 ners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place,  
 although he haue knowledg thereof, yet doeth he not punishe  
 them, forasmuche as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne  
 such thynges as are done on the sea, but only on the lande. Whips  
 are there oftentymes in great peryll, by reason of Whales, & such  
 other monsters of the sea, except the Mariners take good berde,  
 and keepe them far from the shypps with the noyse of Dymmes,  
 and emptye barrells cast into the sea. There are many Synstrels  
 and other that play on instruments, with the swete noyse wher-  
 of they vse to allure soules and fishes to their nettes and snares,  
 Whay also, lye lurking in caues and denues, to auoyde the sharp-  
 nesse of colde, as the Affricanes doe the lyke to defend them schew  
 from the heate. On the top of a certayne mountayne called *Wys-*  
*kerch*, (lying betweene Island and Gruncland, or Greonland) is  
 erected a Sphymans quadrant of marueylous bygnesse, made by  
 two Pirates, named *Pyndigt* and *Bochoost*, in fauour of suche as  
 sayle by those coastes, that they may thereby auoyde the daunge-  
 rous places lying toward Greonland.

Haukes.  
 White Ra-  
 uens.  
 Houses of  
 Whales bones  
 The navigati-  
 on to Islande.

Whales.

One thyng  
 scruping for  
 contrarye dies.

A Sphymans  
 quadrant.

The myddell of the Islande.	7	0	65	30.
The citie Parfol &c.	7	40	60	42.

Laponia.

The region of *Laponia*, was so named of the people that  
 inhabite it. For the Germanes call all suche La-  
 ponies, as are simple or vnapt to thynges. This  
 Do.ii. people

Eden. The decades.  
 Bancroft Library.















